

PR
2721
G 87
Y. 2

CORNELL
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY



BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME
OF THE SAGE ENDOWMENT
FUND GIVEN IN 1891 BY
HENRY WILLIAMS SAGE

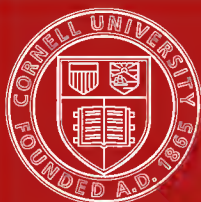
Date Due

JUL 20 1950 AM		
NOV 1 1963 M NCF 11/15/63		
SEP 9 1964 MR 1 8		

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 064 948 908



Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.



THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE
COMPLETE WORKS
OF
THOMAS NASHE.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESSSE HIS SVPPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES:

- i. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL
PROGNOSTICATION.
- ii. STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS,

1592.



WHEN Saul receiv'd no answer down from heav'n,
How quickly was his jealous passion driven
A desperate course! He needs must cure the itch
Of his extreme defiers, by a Witch:
When we have lost our way to God, how leuell,
How easie to be found's the way to the Devell.

FRANCIS QUARLES (CHERTSEY WORTHIES' Library Edition,
'Divine Fancies,' p. 216).

The South Library

OR

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN

Unique or Very Rare

BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

From the Library of



Henry Guth Esq.

(Engraved by J. C. Shaw from a Steel Engraving.)

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, etc.

BY THE

Rev. Alexander B. Grosart, LL.D. F.R.S.

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

The Huth Library.

THE
COMPLETE WORKS

OF

THOMAS NASHE.

||

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. II.

PIERCE PENILESS HIS SVPPPLICATION TO THE DIUELL.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES :

- i. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL
PROGNOSTICATION.
- ii. STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS.

1592.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1883-84.

50 Copies.]

A. 90987

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PIERCE PENILESSÉ HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE DUELLE	1
HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES—	
1. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION . . .	139 ⁴
2. STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CER- TAINÉ LETTERS	171

LATE tyr'd with wo, euen ready for to pine
With rage of loue, I cald my Loue vnkind ;
She in whose eyes loue, though vnfelt, doth shine,
Sweet said, that I true loue in her should find.
I ioyed ; but straight thus watred was my wine :
That loue she did, but loued a loue not blind ;
Which would not let me, whom shee loned, decline
From nobler course, fit for my birth and mind.
And therefore, by her loue's authority,
Wild me these tempests of vaine loue to flie,
And anchor fast my selfe on Vertue's shore.
Alas, if this the only mettall be
Of loue new-coind to help my beggery,
Deere, loue me not, that you may loue me more.

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY : 'Astrophell and Stella,' xii.



v.

PIERCE PENILESSE
HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE
DIUELL.

1592.



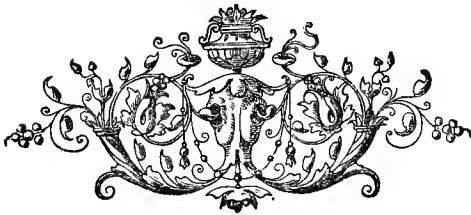
NOTE.

For the exemplar of 'Pierce Penileffe' of 1592 as sanctioned by its Author, I am again indebted to the Huth Library. The semi-surreptitious one issued earlier in the same year by a different publisher—Richard Jhones, against whom good Nicholas Breton made complaint for his sharp practice in assigning to popular names productions that were not really theirs—was reprinted by Mr. J. Payne Collier, most perfunctorily and carelessly, for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1 vol., 1843). The title-page—showing the 'long taile' which Nash demands shall be suppressed—is given on our *verso* of that of 1592 prepared by him in substitution, together with Jhones's short Epistle. As an Appendix-Note to 'Pierce Penileffe,' I add at the close of our reproduction, such 'faults' of the Jhones edition as seem to call for record, albeit I suspect some at least belong to Mr. Collier himself, rather than to his (unique) exemplar. Be this as it may, our text corrects many irritating misprints, and gives better readings in several important places. It is a small 4to, 16 leaves, unpagged, and folios (*i.e.* on one side, from 17 to 40, 2—L. iii.). See our 'Memorial-Introduction—Critical,' in Vol. IV., for notices of this singular book, including a contemporary French translation; also 'Memorial-Introduction—Biographical,' in Vol. I.—A. B. G.

Pierce Penileſſe
HIS SVPPPLICATION
to the Diuell.

Barbaria grandis habere nihil.

Written by *Tho. Naſh*, Gent.



LONDON,
Printed by Abell Ieffes, for
Iohn Buſbie, 1592.

Original semi-surreptitious Title-page and Epistle to Readers.

PIERCE PENILESSÉ
HIS SUPPLICATION TO
THE DEUILL.

Describing the ouer-spreading of Vice, and
the suppression of Vertue.

Pleasantly interlac'd with variable delights : and
pathetically intermixt with conceited
reproofes.

Written by THOMAS NASH, Gentleman.

LONDON,

Imprinted by RICHARD IHONES, dwelling at the
Signe of the *Rose and Crowne*, nere
Holburne Bridge.

1592.

The Printer to the Gentlemen Readers.

Gentlemen,

In the Authour's absence, I haue been bold to publish this pleasaunt and wittie discourse of *Pierce Penilesse, his Supplication to the Diuell*: which title, though it may seeme strange and in it selfe somewhat preposterous, yet if you vouchsafe the reading, you shall finde reason, as well for the Authour's vnouth nomination, as for his vnwonted beginning without epistle, proeme, or dedication: al which he hath inferted conceitedly in the matter; but Ile be no blab to tell you in what place. Bestow the looking, and I doubt not but you shall finde dedication, epistle, and proeme to your liking.

Yours bounden in affection,

R. I.



A priuate Epistle of the Author to
the Printer.

Wherein his full meaning and purpose (in
publishing this Booke) is set forth.

EAith I am verie forrie (Sir) I am thus vn-
awares betrayed to infamie. You write
to me my booke is hasting to the second
impression: he that hath once broke the Ice of
impudence, neede not care how deepe he wade
in discredite. I confesse it to be a meere toy,
not deseruing any iudicial mans view: If it haue
found any friends, so it is, you know very well
that it was abroad a fortnight ere I knewe of it,
and vncorrected and vnfinished it hath offred it
felfe to the oppen sorne of the world. Had you
not beene so froward in the republishing of it,
you should haue had certayne Epistles to Orators
and Poets, to insert to the later end; As
namely, to the Ghost of *Macheuill*, of *Tully*, of
Ouid, of *Roscius*, of *Pace* the Duke of Norfolks
Iester: and lastly, to the Ghost of *Robert Greene*,

telling him, what a coyle there is with pamphleting on him after his death. These were prepared for *Pierce Penileffe* first setting foorth, had not the feare of infection detained mee with my Lord in the Countrey.

Now this is that I would haue you to do in this second edi / tion; First, cut off that long-tayld Title,* and let mee not in the forefront of my Booke, make a tedious Moũtebanks Oration to the Reader, when in the whole there is nothing praise-worthie.

I heare say there be obscure imitators, that goe about to frame a second part to it, and offer it to sell in Paules Church-yard, and elsewhere, as from me. Let me request you, (as euer you wil expect any fauour at my hands) to get some body to write an Epistle before it, ere you set it to sale againe, importing thus much; that if any such lewd deuise intrude it selfe to their handes, it is a cofenage and plaine knauery of him that fels it to get mony, and that I haue no manner of interest or acquaintance with it. Indeed if my leysure were such as I could wysh, I might 'haps (halfe a yeare hence) write the retourne of the *Knight of the Post* from Hell, with the *Deuils* answer to the *Supplication*: but as for a second

* See it on *verso* of Nash's own title-page, p. 4.—G.

part of *Pierce Penileffe*, it is a most ridiculous rogerie.*

Other newes I am aduertized of, that a scald triuiall lying Pamphlet, called *Greens goatf-worth of wit* is giuen out to be of my doing. God neuer haue care of my foule, but vtterly renounce me, if the least word or syllable in it proceeded from my penne, or if I were any way priuie to the writing or printing of it. I am growne at length to see into the vanitie of the worlde more than euer I did, and now I condemne my selfe for nothing so much, as playing the dolt in Print. Out vpon it, it is odious, especially, in this moralizing age, wherein euery one seekes to shew himselfe a Polititian by mis-interpreting.

In one place of my Booke, *Pierce Penileffe* saith but to the Knight of the Post, *I pray how might I call you*, and they say, I meant one *Howe*, a Knaue of that trade, that I neuer heard of before.

The Antiquaries are offended without cause, thinking I goe about to detract from that excellent profession, when (God is my witnesse) I reuerence it as much as any / of them all, and had no manner of allusion to them that stumble at it. I hope they wil giue me leaue to think there be fooles of that Art as well as of all other; but to saye, I vtterly

* See on this in our Memorial-Introduction prefixed to Vol. I.; also *ibid.*, Critical, in Vol. IV.—G.

condemne it as an vnfruitfull studie, or seeme to despise the excellent quallified partes of it, is a most false and iniurious surmise. There is nothing that if a man list he may not wrest or peruert, I cannot forbid anie to thinke villainously, *Sed caueat emptor*, Let the interpreter beware : for none euer heard mee make Allegories of an idle text. Write who wil against me, but let him look his life be without scandale : for if he touch me neuer so litle, Ile be as good as the Blacke Booke to him and his kindred.

Beggerly lyes no beggerly wit but can inuent : who spurneth not at a dead dogge : but I am of another metall, they shall knowe that I liue as their euill Angell, to haunt them world without end, if they disquiet me without cause. Farewell, and let me heare from you as soone as it is come forth. I am the Plagues prisoner in the Country as yet : if the sicknesse cease before the thirde impression, I will come and alter whatsoeuer may be offensiue to any man, and bring you the latter ende.

Your friend, *Tho. Nash.* /



Pierce Penileffe his Supplication
to the Diuell.

HAUING spent manie yeeres in studying how to liue, and liude a long time without mony: hauing tired my youth with follie, and surfetted my minde with vanitie, I began at length to looke backe to repentaunce, & addresse my endeuors to prosperitie: But all in vaine, I fate vp late, and rose earely, contended with the colde, and conuerfed with scarcitie: for all my labours turned to losse, my vulgar Muse was despised and neglected, my paines not regarded, or slightly rewarded, and I my felfe (in prime of my best wit) laid open to pouertie.

Whereupon (in a malecontent humor)

I accused my fortune, raild on my patrones, bit my pen, rent my papers, & ragde in all points like a mad man.

*Discite qui
sapitis, cum
hæc quæ sci-
mus inertes;
Sed trepidas
acies, et fera
bella sequi.*

In which agony tormenting my felfe a long time, I grew by degrees to a milder discontent: and pausing a while ouer my standish, I resolued in verſe to paynt forth my paſſion: which, beſt

agreeing with the vaine of my vnrest, I began to
complaine in this fort.

*Est aliquid
fatale malum
per verba
levare.* Why ist damnation to dispaire and dye,
When life is my true happineffe diseafe?
My soule, my soule, thy safetie makes
me flie

The faultie meanes, that might my paine appeafe.
Diuines and dying men may talke of hell,
But in my heart, her feuerall torments dwell :

*[Ingenio perii
qui miser
ipse meo.]* Ah worthlesse Wit, to traine me to this
woe,

Deceitfull Artes, that nourish Discontent :
Ill thriue the Follie that bewitcht me fo :
Vaine thoughts adieu, for now I will repent.

*Paupertas
impulit audax
ut versus
facerem.* And / yet my wantes perswade me to
proceede,
Since none takes pitie of a Scholler's
neede.

Forgiue me, God, although I curse my birth,
And ban the aire, wherein I breathe a Wretch :
Since Miserie hath daunted all my mirth,
And I am quite vndone through promise-breach.

*Pol me occi-
distis, amici.* Oh frends, no frends, that then vngently
frowne,

When changing Fortune casts vs head-long
downe.

Without redresse complaynes my carelesse verfe,
And *Mydas*-eares relent not at my moane:

In some farre Land will I my griefes
reherfe, *Hei mihi,
quam paucos
hæc meæ dicta
mouent.*

Mongst them that will be mou'd when I
shall groane.

England (adieu) the Soyle that brought me foorth,
Adieu vnkinde, where skill is nothing woorth.

These Rymes thus abruptly set downe, I toft
my imagination a thousand waies, to see if I could
finde any meanes to relieue my estate: But all my
thoughts confortd to this conclusion, that the
world was vncharitable, & I ordaind to be
* miserable. Thereby I grew to con-
sider how many base men that wanted
those partes which I had, enjoyd content
at will, & had wealth at commaund: I

* Miser est
quicumque
ærumnam
suam nequit
occultare.

calde to minde a Cobler, that was worth five
hundred pound, an Hostler that had built a goodly
Inne, & might dispende forty pounds yerely by his
Land, a Carre-man in a lether pilche, that had
whipt out a thousand pound out of his
horse taile: and haue I more witte than

Fortuna
fauet fatuos.

all these (thought I to my selfe)? am I better
borne? am I better brought vp? yea, and better
fauored? and yet am I a begger?

Meritibus
expēditur
causam.

What is the cause? how am I croft,
or whence is this curse?

Euen from hence, that men that should employ such as I am, are enamoured of their own wits, and think whateuer they do is excellent, though it be neuer so scuruie: that Learning (of the ignorant) is rated after the value of the inke and paper: and a Scriuener better paid for an obligation, than a Scholler for the best Poeme he can make; that * euerie grosse brainde Idiot is suffered to come into print, who if hee set foorth a Pamphlet of the praise of Pudding-pricks, or write a Treatise of *Tom Thumme*, or y^e exploitys of *Vntrusse*; it is bought vp thicke & three-folde, when better things lie dead. How then can we chuse but be needy, when ther are so many droans amongst vs? or euer proue rich, y^e toyle a whole yeare for fair looks?

Gentle / Sir Philip Sidney, thou knewst what belongd to a Scholler, thou knewest what paines, what toyle, what trauell, conduct to perfection: wel couldst thou giue euery Vertue his encouragement, euery Art his due, euery writer his desert: cause none more vertuous, witty, or learned than thy selfe.

But thou art dead in thy graue, and haft left too few successors of thy glory, too few to cherish the Sonn of the Muses, or water those budding hopes with their plentie, which thy bountie erst planted.

[*Scribimus
indocti doctique
poemata pas-
sim.*]

*Cultor et
Antistes docto-
rum sancte
virorum.*

*Heu rapiunt
mala fata
bonos.*

Beleeue me, Gentlemen, for some crosse mis-happes, haue taught me experience, *Fluctibus in mediis navim Palinure relinquis.* there is not that strickt obseruation of honour, which hath bene heretofore. Men of great calling take it of merite, to haue their names eternizde by Poets; and whatfoeuer pamphlet or dedication encounters them, they put it vp their sleeues, and scarce giue him thanks that presents it. Much better is it for those golden Pens to raise such vngratefull Peasants from the Dung-hill of obscuritie, and make them equal in fame to the Worthies of olde, when their doting selfe-loue shall challenge it of dutie, and not onely giue them nothing themselues, but impouerish liberalitie in others.

This is the lamentable condition of our Times, that men of Arte must seeke almes of Cormorants, & those that deserue best, be kept vnder by Dunces, who count it a policie to keep them bare, because they should follow their bookes the better: thinking belike, that, as preferment hath made themselves idle, that were earst painfull in meaner places, so it wold likewise slacken the endeouours of those Students, that as yet strive to excell in hope of aduancement. A good policie to suppress superfluous liberalitie. But, had it bene practised when they were promoted, the Yeomandry of the Realme had been better to passe than it is, and one Droane

should not haue driuen so manie Bees from their hony-combes.

I, I, weele giue loofers leaue to talke: it is no matter what *Sic probo* and his pennileffe companions prate, whilest we haue the gold in our coffers: this is it that will make a knaue an honest man, & my neighbour *Cramptons* stripling a better Gentleman than his Grand fier. O it is a trim thing when Pride, the sonne, goes before, & Shame, the father, followes after. Such presidents there are in our Cōmon-wealth a great many; not so much of them whome learning & Industrie hath exalted, (whome I prefer before *Genus et proauos*) as of Carterly vpstarts, that out-face Towne & Countrey in their veluets, / when Sir *Rowland Ruffet-coat*, their dad, goes fagging euery day in his round gascoynes of white cotton, & hath much a do (poore pennie-father) to keepe his vnthrif elbowes in reparations.

Marry, happy are they, say I, that haue such fathers to worke for them, whilst they plaie: for where other men turne ouer manie leaues to get bread and cheefe in their olde age, and studie twentie yeares to distill golde out of incke, our yoong maisters doo nothing but deuise how to spend and aske counsaile of the wine and capons, how they may quickliest consume their patrimonies. As for me, I liue secure from all such perturba-

tions: for (thankes bee to God) I am *vacuus viator*, and care not, though I meete the Commissioners of *New-market-heath* at high midnight, for any crosses, Images, or pictures that I carry about mee, more than needes.

Than needes, quoth I, nay, I would be ashamde of it, if *Opus & Vfus* were not knocking at my doore twentie times a weeke when I am not within: the more is the pitie, that such a franke Gentleman as I, should want: but, since the dice doo runne so vntowardly on my side, I am partly provided of a remedy. For wheras, those that stand most on their honour, haue shut vp their purses, & shift vs off with court-hollie-bread: & on the other side, a number of hypocriticall hot-spurres, that haue GOD alwaies in their mouthes, will giue nothing for Gods sake: I haue clapt vp a handsome Supplication to the Diuell, and sent it by a good fellow, that I know will deliuer it.

And because you may beleeeue mee the better, I care not if I acquaint you with the circumstance.

I was informd of late daies, that a certaine blinde Retayler called the Diuel, vsed to lend money vpon pawnes or any thing, and would let one for a neede, haue a thousand poundes vppon a Statute Merchaunt of his foule: or if a man plide him throughly, would trust him vppon a Bill of his hand, without any more circumstance. Besides,

hee was noted for a priuie Benefactor to Traytors and Parasites, and to aduaunce fooles and asses farre sooner than any: to be a greedie pursuer of newes, and so famous a Politician in purchasing, that Hel, which at the beginning was but an obscure Village, is now become a huge citie, whervnto all countryes are Tributary.

These manifest coniectures of Plentie, assembled in one common-place of ability, I determined to clawe Auarice by the elboe, til his full belly gaue me a full hand, and let him blood with my pen (if it / might be) in the veine of liberality: and so (in short time) was this Paper-monster, Pierce Penilesse, begotten.

But written and all, heere lies the question, where shall I find this old Assfe, that I may deliuer it? Masse, thats true: they say the Lawyers haue the deuill and al: and it is like enough he is playing Ambodexter amongst them. Fie; fie, the deuill a driuer in Westminster Hall: it can neuer be.

Now, I pray, what do you imagine him to be? Perhaps you thinke it is not possible he should be so graue. Oh then, you are in an error, for he is as formal as the best Scriuener of them all. Marry, he doth not vse to weare a night-cap; for his hornes will not let him: and yet I knowe a hundred, as well headed as he, that will make a iolly shift with

a Court-cup on their crownes, if the weather be colde.

To proceed with my tale : to Westminster Hall I went, and made a search of Enquiry, from the blacke gowne to the buckram bagge, if there were any such Sergeant, Bencher, Counsailler, Atorney, or petifogger, as *Signior Cornuto Diabolo*, with the good face? But they al (*vnâ voce*) affirmed, that he was not there : marry, whether hee were at the Exchange or no, amongst the ritch Merchants, that they could not tell : but it was likelier of the two, that I should meet with him, or heare of him, at the least, in those quarters. I faith, and say you so, quoth I? and Ile bestow a little labour more, but Ile hunt him out.

Without more circumstance, thither came I : and, thrusting my selfe, as the manner is, amongst the confusion of languages, I asked (as before) whether he were there extant or no? But from one to another, *Non novi Dæmonem*, was all the answer I could get. At length (as Fortune ferued) I lighted vpon an old, straddling Ufurer, clad in a damaske cassocke, edged with Fox-fur, a paire of trunke slops, sagging down like a shoemaker's wallet, and a short thrid-bare gown on his backe, fac't with moath-eaten budge : vpon his head he wore a filthy, coarse biggin, & next it a garnish of night-caps, with a sage butten cap, of

the forme of a cow-sheard, ouerspread very orderly: a fat chuffe it was, I remember, with a gray beard cut short to the stumps, as though it were grimde, and a huge, woorme-eaten nose, like a clufter of grapes hanging downe-wards. Of him I demaunded, if hee could tell mee any tidings of the partie I fought for.

By my troth, quoth he, stripling, (and then he cought) I sawe him not lately, nor know I certainly where he keepes: but thus much I heard / by a Broker, a friend of mine, that hath had some dealings with him in his time, that he is at home sicke of the goute, and will not bee spoken withal vnder more than thou art able to giue, fom two or three [hundred] angels, if thou hast any fute to him: & then, perhaps, hele fraine curtesie, with his legges in childe-bed, and come forth and talke with thee: but, otherwise, *non est domi*, hee is busie with *Mammon*, & t[h]e Prince of the North, how to build vp his kingdome, or sending his spirits abroad to vndermine the maligners of his gouernment.

I, hearing of this colde comfort, tooke my leaue of him very faintly, and like a careles male-content, that knew not which way to turne, retired me to Paules, to seeke my dinner with Duke *Humfrey*; but, when I came there, the olde fouldioer was not vp. Hee is long a rising, thought I; but thats all

one, for hee that hath no money in his purse, must go dine with Sir John Best-betrust, at the signe of the chalk and the Post.

Two hongry turnes had I scarce fetcht in this waft gallery, when I was encountred by a neat pedanticall fellow, in forme of a cittizen: who thrusting himselfe abruptly into my company, like an Intelligencer, began very earnestly to question me about the cause of my discontent, or what made me so sad, that seemed too young to be acquainted with sorrow. I nothing nice to vnfold my estate to any what foeuer, discourst to him the whole circumstance of my care, and what toyll and paines I had tooke in searching for him that would not be heard of. Why fir (quoth he), had I bene priuie to your purpose before, I could haue easd you of this trauell; for if it be the deuill you seeke for, know I am his man. I pray, fir, how might I call you? A knight of the Post, quoth he, for so I am tearmed: *Non bene conducti vendunt perjuriam testes.* a fellowe that will sweare you any thing for twelue pence: but indeed, I am a spirite in nature and essence, that take vpon me this humaine shape, onely to set men together by the eares, and send soules by millions to hell.

Now trust me, a substantiall trade: but when doe you thinke you could send next to your maister? why, euery day: for there is not a

cormorant that dies, or Cut-purse that is hanged, but I dispatch letters by his soule to him, and to al my friends in the Low-cuntries: wherefore, if you haue any thing that you would haue transported, giue it me, and I will see it deliuered.

Yes, marry haue I (quoth I) a certaine Supplication heere vnto your Maister, which you may peruse if it please you. With that he opened it, and read as followeth.



To the high and mightie Prince of Darknesse,
Donsell dell Lucifer, King of Acheron, Stix,
and Phlegeton, duke of Tartary, mar-
quesse of Cocytus, and Lord
high Regent of *Lymbo* :
his distressed

Orator, Pierce Pennileffe, *wissheth encrease of damna-*
tyon and malediction eternall, per Iesum Christum
Dominum Nostrum.



Oft humbly sueth vnto your sin-
fulnes, your single soald Orator,
Pierce Pennileffe: that whereas
your impious excellence hath had
the poore tennement of his purse
any time this halfe yeer for your daunc-
ing schoole, and he (notwithstanding) No : He be .
sworne vpon
a book haue I
not.
hath receiued no penny nor croffe for
farme, according to the vsuall manner, it may
please your gracelesse Maiestie to consider of him,

and giue order to your seruant Auarice he may be dispatched: infomuch as no man heere in London can haue a dauncing schoole without rent, and his wit and knauery cannot be maintained with nothing. Or, if this be not so plausible to your honorable infernallship, it might seeme good to your helhood to make extent vpon the foules of a number of vncharitable Cormorants, who, hauing incurd the daunger of a *Premunire* with meddling with matters that properly concerne your owne person, deserue no longer to liue (as men) amongst men, but to bee incorporated in the society of diuels. By which meanes the mightie controller of fortune and imperious subuerter of destiny, delicious gold, the poore mans God, and Idoll of Princes (that lookes pale and wanne through long imprisonment) might at length be restored to his powrfull Monarchie, and eftsoon bee sette at liberty, to helpe his friends that haue neede of him.

I knowe a great fort of good fellows that
* Id est, for the fredome of gold. would venture farre for his freedom,*
 and a number of needy Lawyers (who now mourn in threed-bare gownes for his thraldome) that would goe neere to poison his keepers with false Latine, if that might procure his enlargement: but inexorable yron detaines him in the dungeon of the night, so that (poore creature)

hee can neither traffique with the Mercers and Tailers as he was wont, nor dominere in Tauernes as he ought.

Famine, Lent, and deffolation, fit in ony on-kind iackets before the doore of his indurance, as a *Chorus* in the Tragedy of Hofpitality, to / tell hunger & pouerty thers no reliefe for them there : and in the inner part of this vgly habi-^{The description of Greedines.} tation ftands Greedineffe, prepared to deuoure all that enter, attyred in a Capouch of written parchement, buttond downe before with Labels of waxe, and lin'd with sheepes fells for warmenes : his Cap furd with cats skinnes, after the Muscouie fafhion, and all to be taffeld with Angle-hookes, in ftعاد of Aglets, ready to catch hold of all thofe to whom hee fhewes any humblenes : for his breeches, they were made of the lifts of broad cloaths, which he had by letters pattents affured him and his heyres, to the vtter ouerthrowe of Bowcafes and cufhin makers, and bumbaffed they were, like Beere barreles, with ftatute Marchants and forfeitures : but of all, his fhooes were the ftrangeft, which, being nothing elfe but a couple of crab fhells, were toothd at the toes with two fharp fixpennie nailes, that digd vp euery dunghill they came by for gold, and fnarld at the ftones as hee went in the ftreet, becaufe they weare fo common for men, women, and children, to

tread vpon, and hee could not deuise how to wrest an odde fine out of any of them.

Thus walks hee vp and downe all his life time, with an yron crow in his hand instead of a staffe, and a Sariant's Mace in his mouth, (which night and day he gnaws vpon) and either busies himselfe in fetting siluer lime twigs, to entangle yoong Gentlemen, and casting foorth silken shrap, to catch Woodcocks, or in fying of Muckehills and shop-duft, whereof he will boult a whole cartload to gaine a bowd Pinne.

On the other side, Dame Niggardize, his wife, The description of Dame Niggerdize. in a sedge rugge kirtle, that had beene a mat time out of minde, a course hempen raile about her shoulders, borrowed of the one end of a hop-bag, an apron made of Almanackes out of date, (such as stand vpon screens, or on the backside of a dore in a Chandlers shop) & an old wiues pudding pan on her head, thrumd with the parings of her nailes, fate barrelling vp the droppings of her nose, in steede of oyle, to faime wool withall, and would not aduenture to spit without halfe a dozen of porrengers at her elbow.

The house, (or rather the hell) where these two Earthwormes encaptiued this beautifull Substaunce, was vast, large, strong built, and well furnished, all saue the Kitchin : for that was no bigger than the

Cooks roome in a ship, with a little court chimney, about the compasse of a *Parentthesis* in proclamation-print: then iudge you what dim / inutiue dishes came out of this doues-neast. So likewise, of the Buttrie: for whereas in houfes of such stately foundation, that are built to outward shewe so magnificent, euery Office is answerable to the Hall, which is principall, there the Buttrie was no more but a blind Cole-houfe, vnder a paire of stayres, wherein (vprising & down lying) was but one single kilderkin of small beere, that wold make a man, with a carrouse of a spooneful, runne through an Alphabet of faces. Nor vſd they any glassees or cups (as other men), but onely little farthing ounce boxes, whereof one of them fild vp with froath (in manner and forme of an Ale-houfe) was a meales allowance for the whole household. It were lamentable to tell what miserie the Rattes and Myce endured in this hard world: how, when all supply of vitualls failed them, they went a Boot-haling one night to Sinior Greedineffe bed-chamber, where finding nothing but emptines and vastitie, they encountred (after long inquisitiō) with a cod-peece, well dinged & manured with greace (which my pinch-fart penie-father had retaind from his Bachelorship, vntill the eating of these presents). Vppon that they set, and with a couragious assault rent it cleane away from the

breeches, and then carried it in triumph, like a coffin, on their shoulders betwixt them. The verie spiders and dust weauers, that wont to set vp their loomes in euery windowe, decaied and vndone through the extreame dearth of the place, (that afforded them no matter to worke on) were constrained to breake, against their wills, and goe dwell in the countrey, out of the reach of the broome and the wing: and generally, not a flea nor a cricket that carried anie braue minde, that would stay there after he had once tasted the order of their fare. Onely vnfortunate golde (a predestinat slaue to drudges and fooles) liues in endlesse bondage ther amongst them, and may no way be releast, except you fend the rot halfe a yeare amongst his keepers, and so make them away with a murrion, one after another.

O but a far greater enormitie raigneth in the heart of the Court: Pride, the peruerter ^{The} ^{complaynt of} ^{Pryde.} of all Vertue, fitteth appared in the Merchants spoiles, and ruine of yoong Citizens, and scorneth Learning, that gaue their vp-start Fathers titles of Gentry.

All malcontent fits the greasie sonne of a ^{The nature of} ^{an vpstart.} Cloathier, and complaines (like a decaied Earle) of the ruine of ancient houfes: whereas, the Weauers loomes first framed the web of his honour, and the locks / of wool,

that bushes and brambles haue tooke for toule of insolent sheepe, that would needs striue for the wall of a fir-bush, haue made him of the tenths of their tarre, a Squier of low degree: and of the collections of the scatterings, a Justice, *Tam Marti quam Mercurio*, of Peace and of Coram. Hee will bee humorous, forsooth, and haue a broode of fashions by himselfe. Sometimes (because Loue commonly weares the liuerey of Witte) hee will be an *Inamorato Poeta*, and sonnet a whole quire of paper in praise of Lady Swin-snout, his yeolow-fac'd Mistres, and weare a feather of her rain-beaten fanne for a fauor, like a fore-horse. Al *Italionato* is his talke, and his spade peake is as sharpe as if he had been a Pioner before the walles of *Roan*. Hee will despise the barbarisme of his owne Countrey, and tell a whole Legend of lyes of his trauailes vnto *Constan-tinople*. If he be challenged to fight, for his delaterye excuse, hee obiects that it is not the custome of the Spaniard, or the Germaine, to looke backe to euery dog that barks. You shall see a dapper Jacke, that hath beene but ouer at *Deepe*, wring his face round about, as a man would stirre vp a mustard pot, and talke English through the teeth, like *Iaques Scabd-hams*, or *Monsieur Mingo de Moustrap*: when (poore slaue) he hath but dipt his bread in wilde Boares grace, and come home againe: or beene

bitten by the shinnes by a Wolfe: and faith, he hath aduentured vppon the Barricadoes of *Gurney*, or *Guingan*, and fought with the yoong Guife hand to hand.

Some thinke to be counted rare Politicians and Statefmen, by beeing solitary: as who The counter-
feit polititian. should say, I am a wife man, a braue man, *Secreta mea mihi: Frustra sapit, qui sibi non sapit*: and there is no man worthy of my companie or friendship: when, although he goes vngartred like a malecontent Cutpurffe, and weares his hat ouer his eies like one of the curfed crue, yet cannot his stabbing dagger, or his nittie loue-locke, keepe him out of the Legend of fantastick cockscombs. I pray ye, good Mounfier Diuell, take some order, that the streeetes be not pestered with them so as they are. Is it not a pitiful thing that a fellow that eates not a good meales meat in a weeke, but beggereth his belly quite and cleane, to make his backe a certaine kind of a brokerly Gentleman: and nowe & then (once or twice in a Tearme) comes / to the eightene pence Ordenary, because hee would be seen amongst Caualiers and braue courtyers, liuing otherwise all the yeere long with salt Butter & Holland cheefe in his chamber, should take vppe a scornfull melancholy in his gate & countenance, course & talke, as though our common-welth were but a mockery of govern-

ment, and our Maieſtrates fooles, who wronged him in not looking into his deſerts, not imploying him in State matters, and that, if more regard were not had of him very ſhortly, the whole Realme ſhould haue a miſſe of him, & he would go (I may would he) where he ſhould be more accounted off.

Is it not wonderfull ill-provided, I ſay, that this diſdainfull companion is not made one of the fraternity of Foole, to talke before great States, with ſome olde mothe-eaten Polititian, of mending high waies, and leading Armies into Fraunce?

A young Heyre, or Cockney, that is his Mothers Darling, if hee haue playde the waſte-^{The prodigall} good at the Innes of the Court, or about ^{yoong} Master. London, and that neither his Students penſion, nor his vnthriftes credite, will ſerue to maintaine his Collidge of whores any longer, falles in a quarrelling humor with his fortune, becauſe ſhe made him not King of the *Indies*, and ſweares and ſtares, after ten in the hundreth, that nere a ſuch Peſant, as his Father or brother, ſhall keepe him vnder: hee will to the ſea, and teare the gold out of the Spaniards throats, but he will haue it, byrladie: And when he comes there, poore ſoule, hee lyes in brine, in Balift, and is lamentable ficke of the ſcurvies: his daintie fare is turned to a hungry feaſt of Dogs and Cats, or Haberdine and poore John, at the

most, and which is lamentablest of all, that without Mustard.

As a mad Ruffion, on a time, being in daunger of shipwrack by a tempest, and seeing all other at their vowes and praiera, that if it would please God, of his infinite goodnesse, to delyuer them out of that imminent daunger, one woulde abiure this sinne wherevnto he was adjected: an other, make satisfaction for that vyolence he had committed: he, in a desperate iest, began thus to reconcile his soule to heauen.

O Lord, if it may seeme good to thee to deliuer me from this feare of vntimely death, I vowe before thy Throne, and all thy starry Host, neuer to eate Haberdine more whilest I liue.

Well, so it fell out, that the /Sky cleared and the tempest ceased, and this carelesse wretch, that made such a mockery of praier, readie to set foote a Land, cryed out: not without Mustard, good Lord, not without Mustard: as though it had been the greatest torment in the world, to haue eaten Haberdine without Mustard. But this by the way, what pennance can be greater for Pride, than to let it swinge in hys owne halter? *Dulce bellum inexpertis*: theres no man loues the smoake of his owne Countrey, that hath not been syngde in the flame of an other foyle. It is a pleasant thing, ouer a full pot, to read the fable of thirftie

Tantalus : but a hard matter to digest salt meates at Sea, with stinking water.

Another misery of Pride it is, when men that haue good parts, and beare the name of ^{The pride of the learned.} deepe scholers, cannot be content to participate one faith with all Christendome, but, because they will get a name to their vaine glory they will set their selfe-loue to study to inuent new sects of singularity, thinking to liue when they are dead, by hauing theyr sects called after their names, as *Donatists* of *Donatus*, *Arrians* of *Arrius*, & a number more new faith-founders, that haue made *England* the exchange of Innouations, & almost asmuch confusion of Religion in euery Quarter, as there was of tongues at the building of the Tower of *Babell*. Whence, a number that fetch the Articles of their Beleeefe out of *Aristotle*, & thinke of heauen and hell as the Heathen Philosophers, take occasion to deride our Ecclesiasticall State, & all Ceremonies of Diuine worship, as bug-beares and scar-crowes, because (like *Herodes* souldiers) we diuide Christs garment amongst vs in so many peeces, and of the vesture of saluation make some of vs Babies & apes coates, others straight trusses & Diuels breeches: some gally-gascoines, or a shipmans hose, like the Anabaptists & adulterous Familists: others with the Martinists, a hood with two faces, to hide their

hypocrisie: and, to conclude, some, like the Barrowists and Greenwoodians, a garment full of the plague, which is not to be worne before it be new washt.

Hence Atheists triumph and reioyce, and talke as prophanely of the Bible, as of Beuis of Hampton. I heare say there be Mathematitions abroad that will prooue men before *Adam*, and they are harboured in high places, who will maintaine it to the death, that there are no diuells.

It is a shame (senior *Belzibub!*) that you should suffer your selfe thus / to be tearmed a bastard, or not approue to your predestinate children, not only that they haue a father, but that you are hee that must owne them. These are but the suburbes of the sinne we haue in hand: I must describe to you a large cittie, wholly inhabited with this damnable enormitie.

In one place let me shewe you a base Artificer, that hath no reuenues to boast on but a Needle in his bosome, as braue as any Penfioner or Nobleman.

In an other corner, Mistris Minx, a Marchants wife, that wil eate no cherries, forsooth, but when they are at twenty shillings a pound, that lookes as simperingly as if she were besmeard, & iets it as gingerly as if she

The diuell
hath children
(as other
men), but
fewe of them
know their
owne father.

The pride of
Artificers.

The pride of
marchants
wiues.

were dancing the Canaries : she is so finicall in her speach, as though she spake nothing but what she had first sewd ouer before in her Samplers, and the puling accent of her voyce is like a fained treble, or ones voyce that interprets to the puppets. What should I tell how squeamish she is in her dyet, what toyle she puts her poore seruants vnto, to make her looking glasses in the pauement? how she wil not goe into the fields, to cowre on the greene grasse, but shee must haue a Coatch for her convoy : and spends halfe a day in pranking her selfe if she be inuited to anie strange place? Is not this the exceffe of pride, signior Sathan? Goe too, you are vnwife, if you make her not a chiefe Saint in your Calender.

The next obiect that encounters my eyes, in some such obscure vpstart gallants, as without desert or seruice, are raised from the plough to be checkmate with Princes : and these I can no better compare than The pride of pesants sprung vp of nothing. to creatures that are bred *Sine coitu*, as crickets in chimnyes : to which I resemble poore Scullians, that, from turning spit in the chimney corner, are on the sodaine hoised vp from the Kitchin into the waiting chamber, or made Barons of the beanes, and Marquesses of the mary-boanes : some by corrupt water, as gnats, to which we may liken Brewers, that, by retayling filthy *Thames* water, come in few

yeres to be worth fortie or fiftie thousand pound : others by dead wine, as little flying wormes : and so the Vintners in like case : others by slime, as frogs, which may be alluded to Mother *Bunches* flimie ale, that hath made her, & some other of her fil-pot family so wealthy : others by dirt, as worms : and so I know many gold-finers & hoflers come vp : some by hearbs, as cankers, & after the same sort our Apothecaries : others by ashes, as *Scarabes* : and how / else get our Colliers the pence ? Others from the putrified flesh of dead beasts, as Bees of Bulls, & butchers by fly-blowne beefe, waspes of horses, and Hackney-men by felling their lame iades to hunts-men, for carrion.

Yet am I not against it, that these men by their mechanical trades should come to be *sparage* gentlemen & chuff-headed Burghomasters :
Sparagus a
 flowre that
 neuer groweth
 but through
 mans dong. but that better places should be possessed by coyftrells, & the Coblers crowe, for crying but *ae Cæsar*, be more esteemed than rarer birds, that haue warbled sweeter notes vnrewarded. But it is no meruaile : for as Hemlocke fatteth Quailes, & Henbane Swine, which to al other is poyson, so some mens vices haue power to aduance them, which would subuert any else that should seeke to climbe by them : and it is inough in them, that they can pare their nailes well, to get them a liuing, when

as the feauen liberall Sciences & a good leg, will scarce get a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet.

These whelpes of the first litter of Gentilitie, these Exhalations, drawen vp to the heauen of honor from the dunghil of abiect fortune, haue long been on horsebacke to come riding to your Diuelship: but, I know not how, like *Saint George*, they are alwaies mouēd, but neuer moue. Here they out-face Towne & cuntry, & doo nothing but bandy factions with their betters. Their bigge limbes yeeld the Common-wealth no other seruice but idle sweate, & their heads, like rough hewen Gloabes, are fit for nothing but to be the block-houses for sleepe. *Raynard*, the Fox, may well beare vp his taile in the Lions denne, but when he comes abroad, he is afraid of euery dogge that barks. What curre will not bawle, & be ready to flye in a mans face, when he is fet on by his master, who, if hee bee not by to encourage him, he casts his taile betwixt his legges, & steales away like a sheepe byter. *Vlisses* was a tall man vnder *Ajax* shield: but by himselfe hee would neuer aduenture but in the night. Pride is neuer built but vpon some pillers: & let his supporters faile him neuer so little, you shall finde him very humble in y^e dust. Wit oftentimes stands in stead of a chiefe arche to vnderprop it, in soldiers strēgth, in womē beauty.

Drudges, that haue no extraordinarie giftes of body nor of minde, filche themselues into some Noble mans seruice, either by bribes or by flattery, and, when they are there, they so labour it with cap & knee, and ply it with priuie whisperinges, that they wring themselues into his good opinion ere he be a ware. Then, doo they vaunt themselues / ouer the common multitude, and are readie to braue anie man that stands by himselfe. Their Lords authoritie is as a rebater to beare vp the Peacockes taile of their boasting, and any thing that is said or done to the vnhandsoming of their ambition is straight wrested to the name of treason. Thus do weedes grow vp whiles no man regards them, and the Ship of Fooles is arriued in the Hauen of Felicitie, whilest the Scoutes of Enuie contemne the attempts of any such small Barkes.

But beware you that be great mens Faurites: let not a seruile, insinuating slaue, creepe betwixt your legges into credit with your Lords: for pefants that come out of the colde of pouertie, once cherisht in the bosome of prosperitie, will straight forget that euer there was a winter of want, or who gaue them room to warme them. The son of a churle cannot choose but prooue ingrateful, like his Father. Trust not a villaine that hath bene miserable, and is sodainly grown happie.

The base insinuating of drudges, & their practise to aspyre.

Vertue ascendeth by degrees of desert into dignitie: gold & lust may lead a man a nearer way to promotion: but he that hath neither comelineffe nor coine to commend him, vndoubtedly* As by carrying tales, or playing the douty Pandor. if of a moale-hil he grows to a mountaine in a moment. This is that which I vrge: there is no friendshipe to bee had with him that is resolute to doe or suffer any thing rather than to endure the destenie whereto he was borne: for he will not spare his owne Father or Brother, to make himselfe a Gentleman.

Fraunce, Italy, and Spaine, are all full of these false hearted *Machiullians*; but properly Pride is the disease of the Spaniard, who is born a Bragart in his mothers womb: for, if he be but 17 yeers old, and hath come to the place where a Field was fought, (though halfe a yeare before) he then talks like one of the Giants that made warre against Heauen, and stands vpon his honor, as much as if he were one of *Augustus* Souldiers, of whom he first intituted the order of Heralds: and let a man sooth him in this vaine of kilcove vanitie, you may commaund his hart out of his belly, to make you a rasher on the coales, if you will next your heart.

The Italian is a more cunning proud fellowe, and hides his humour farre cleanlier, and indeed seemes

to take a pride in humilitie, & will profer a fraunger
The pride of
the Italian. more courtesie than hee meanes to per-
 forme. Hee hateth him deadly that takes
 him at his word : as, for example, if vpon an occasion
 of meeting, he request you to dinner or supper at
 his house, / and that at the first or second intreatie
 you promise to bee his guesst, he will be the mortallst
 enemie you haue : but if you deny him, he will
 thinke you haue manners and good bringing vp, and
 will loue you as his brother : marry, at the third or
 fourth time you must not refuse him. Of al things
 he counteth it a mighty disgrace to haue a man
 passe iustling by him in hast on a narrowe causey,
 and aske him no leaue, which he neuer reuengeth
 with lesse then a stab.

The Frenchman (not altered from his owne
 nature) is wholle compact of deceiuable Courtship,
The pride of
the frenchman. and for the most part, loues none but
 himselfe and his pleasure : yet though he
 be the most *Grand Seigneur* of them all, he will say,
A vostre seruice & commandement Mounseur, to the
 meaneft vassaile he meets. Hee thinkes he doth
 a great fauour to that gentleman, or follower of
 his, to whom hee talks fitting on his close stoole :
 and with that fauour (I haue heard) the Princes
 wanted to grace the Noble men of *France* : and
 a great man of their Nation comming in time past
 ouer into *England*, and beeing here very honorably

receiued, he in requital of his admirable entertain-
ment, on an euening going to the priuie, (as it
were to honour extraordinarily our English Lords,
appointed to attend vpon him) gaue one the candle,
another his girdle, & another the paper: but they
(not acquainted with this newe kinde of gracing)
accompanying him to the pryuie dore, set downe the
trash, and so left him: which he, considering what
ineftimable kindnes he extended to them therin
more than vsual, tooke very hainoufly.

The most grosse and senceleffe proud dolts (in
a difference from all these kinds) are the Danes,
who stand so much vpon their vnweldy The pride of
the dane. burliboand souldiery, that they account
of no man that hath not a battle Axe at his girdle
to hough dogs with, or weares not a cockes feather
in a thrumd hat like a caualier: briefly, he is the
best foole bragart vnder heauen. For besides
nature hath lent him a flaberkin face, like one
of the foure winds, and cheeks that sag like a
womans dugs ouer his chin-bone, his apparel is
so stuft vp with bladders of Taffatie, and his
back like biefe stuft with Parsly, so drawne out
with Ribands and deuises, and blisterd with light
farcenet bastings, that you would thinke him no-
thing but a swarme of Butterflies, if you saw him
a far off.* Thus walkes hee vp and * If you know
him not by
any of these downe in his Maiefty, taking a yard of

marks, look on
his fingers, &
you shal be
sure to find
half a dozen
siluer rings,
worth three
pence a peece.

ground at euery step, and stamps on
the earth so terrible, as if he ment to
knocke vppe a spirite, when (foule
drunken bezzle) if an English/man set
his little finger to him, he falles like a
hogs-trough that is set on one end. Therefore, I
am the more vehement against them, because they
are an arrogant Ass-headed people, that
naturally hate learning, and all them
that loue it: yea, & for they would
vtterly roote it out from among them, they haue
with-drawen all rewards from the Professors therof.
Not *Barbary* it selfe is halfe so barbarous as they are.

The Danes
enemies to all
learning.

First, whereas the hope of honour maketh a
Souldior in *England*: Byshopricks, Deanries, Pre-
bendaries, and other priuate dignities, animate
our Diuines to such excellence: the ciuill Lawyers
haue their degrees & consistories of honour by
themselues, equal in place with Knights and
Esquiers: the common Lawyers (suppose in the
beginning they are but husbandmens sons) come in
time to be chiefe Fathers of the land, and manie
of them not the meanest of the Priuie Counsell.

There, the souldiour may fight himselfe out of
his skinne, and do more exploits than
hee hath doys in his purse, before from
a common Mercenary he come to be
Corporal of the mould cheefe: or the Lieutennant

No rewards
amongst them
for desert.

get a Captainship. None but the son of a Corporall must be a Corporall, nor any be Captaine, but the lawfull begotten of a Captaines body. Bishops, Deans, Prebendaries, why they know no such functions: a sort of ragged Ministers they haue, of whom they count as basely, as water-bearers. If any of the Noblemen refrain three howers in his life time from drinking, to study the Lawes, hee may perhaps haue a little more gouernment put into his hands than an other: but, otherwise, Burgomasters & Gentlemen beare all the sway of both swords, spiritual and temporall. It is death there for anie but a husbandman to marry a husbandmans daughter, or a Gentlemans childe to ioyne with any but the sonne of a Gentleman. Marry this, the king may well banish, but hee cannot put a Gentleman vnto death in any cause whatsoever, which makes them stand vpon it so proudly as they doe. For fashion sake some will put their children to schoole, but they set them not to it till they are foureteene yeere old: so that you shall see a great boy with a beard learne his A B C, and sit weeping vnder the rod, when he is thirtie yeeres old.

I will not stand to inferre what a preiudice it is to the thrift of a flourishing State, to ^{What it is to} poyson the groth of glory, by giuing ^{make labor} it ^{without hope.} without hope. nought but the puddle water of penury to drinke:

to clippe the winges of a high trowning Faulcon, who, wheras she wont in her feathered youthfulness, to looke with an amiable eye on her gray breast, and her speckled side sayles, all finnowed with filuer quilles, and to dryue whole Armies of fearefull foules before her to her maisters Table ; now she sits sadly on the ground, picking of wormes, mourning the crueltie of those vngentleman-like idle hands, that dismembreth the beauty of her trayne

You all knowe that man (insomuch as hee is the Image of God) delighteth in honour and worship, and all holy Writ warranteth that delight, so it bee not derogatory to any part of Gods owne worship. Now, take away that delight, a discontented idleness ouertakes him. For his hire, any handycraft man, be he Carpenter Joyner or Painter, will ploddingly do his day-labor : but to adde credit and fame to his workmanship, or to winne a mastery to himselfe about all other, hee will make a further assay in his trade than euer hitherto he did : hee will haue a thousand flourishes, which before he neuer thought vpon, and in one day ridde more out of hand, than earst he did in ten : So in Armes, so in Arts : if titles of fame and glory be proposed to forward minds, or that any soueraigntie (whose sweetness they haue not yet felt) be set in likely view for them to fore too, they will make a ladder

of cord of the links of their braines, but they will fasten their handes, as wel as their eies, on the imaginatiue blisse, which they already enioy by admiration. Experience reproues me for a foole, for delating on so manifest a case.

The Danes are bursten-bellied fots, that are to be confuted with nothing but Tankards or quart pots, and *Ouid* might as wel haue read his verses to the *Getes* that vnderstood him not, as a man talke reason to them that haue no eares but their mouths, nor sence but of that which they swallow downe their throats. God so loue me, as I loue the quickest-witted Italians, and therefore loue them the more, because they mortally detest this furley fwinish Generation.

I need not fetch colours from other countries to paint the vglie visage of Pride, since her picture is fet forth in so many painted faces here at home. What drugs, what forceries, what oiles, what waters, what oyntments, doe our curious Dames vse to inlarge our withered* beauties. Their lips are as lauishly red, as if they vsed to kisse an okerman eury morning, and their cheeks fuger-candied & cherry blusht so sweetly after the colour* of a newe Lord Mayors postes, as if the pageant of their wedlocke holiday

And that sence often times maketh them sencelesse.

* Withered flowers need much watering.

* And will endure all wethers as well as they. They may well be called counterfaites, since the beauty they imitate is counterfeyted.

were harde at the doore : so / that if a Painter were to drawe any of their counterfets on a Table, he needes no more but wet his pencill, and dab it on their cheekes, and he shall haue vermillion and white enough to furnish out his worke, though he leaue his tar-boxe at home behinde him. Wife was that fin-washing Poet that made the Ballet of Blue starch and poaking stick, for indeede the * lawne of licentiousnesse hath consumed all the wheate of hospitalitie. It is said, Laurence Lucifer, that you went vp and downe London crying there like a lanterne and candle man. I meruaile no Laundresse would giue you the washing and starching of your face for your labour, for God knowes it is as blacke as the blacke Prince.

It is suspected you haue been a great *tobacco-taker* * in your youth, which causeth it to come so to passe: but Dame Nature, your nurse, was partly in fault, else she might haue remedied it. * She should haue noynted your face ouer night with *Lac virginis*, which, baking vpon it in bed till the morning, she might haue pild off the scale like the skin of a custard, and making a poffet of vergis mixt with the oyle of Tartary and Camphire, and bathde it in it a

* Marke these two letter-leaping Metaphors, good people. So saie the learned Polihistor Rimerus, in his first booke, first page, & first line of his Ballad of blew starch and poaking stickes.

* The diuell a great Tobaccotaker.

* A medicine to make the diuel faire.

quarter of an houre, and you had been as faire as the floure of the frying pan. I warrant, we haue old hacksters in this great Grandmother of Corporations, Madame *Troynouant*, that haue not backbited anie of their neighbours with the tooth of enuy this twentie yeare, in the wrinkles of whose face, yee may hide false dice, and play at cherry pit in the dint of their cheekes: yet these aged mothers of iniquitie will haue their deformities newe plaistered ouer, & weare nosegayes of yeolow haire on their furious foreheads, when age hath written, Hoe God, be here, on their bald burnt parchment pates. Pish, pish, what talke you of old age or balde pates? men & women that haue gone vnder the South pole,* must lay off their furde night-caps in spight of their teeth, & become yeomen of the Vineger bottle: a close periwig hides al the finnes of an old whore-master; but *Cucullus non facit Monachum*,* tis not their newe bonnets will keepe them from the old boan-ach. Ware when a mans finnes are written on his ey-browes, and that there is not a haire bredth betwixt them and the falling sicknes. The times are dangerous, & this is an yron age, or rather no yron age, for fwords & bucklers goe to pawne a pace in Long lane: but a tinne age: for tinne and pewter are

He that wipes his nose, and hath it not, shall forfeit hys whole face.

* Alias, Mother Cornelius Meridian.

* Translated word for word, juxta originale.

more esteemed than Latine. You that be wise, despise it, abhorre it, neglect it, for what should a / man care for gold that cannot get it.

An Antiquarie is an honest man, for he had rather scrape a peece of copper out of the durt, than a crowne out of Ploidens standish. I know manie wise Gentlemen of this musty vocation, who out of loue with the times wherein they liue, fall a retailing of *Alexanders* stirrops, because (in veritie) there is not such a strong peece of stretching leather made now adayes, nor yron so well tempred for anie money. They will blow their nose in a box, and say it is the spittle that *Diogenes* spet in ones face: who being inuited to dinner to his house, that was neat and braue in all points as might be deuised, & the grüting Dog, somewhat troubled with the rheume (by meanes of his long fasting and staying for dinner more than wont), spet full in his Hostes face: and being askt the reason of it, said, it was the foulest place he could spie out in all his house. Let their Mistres (or some other woman) giue them a fether of her fanne for a fauor, & if one ask them what it is? they make answer, a plume of the Phenix, whereof there is but one in all the whole world. A thousand guegawes and toyes haue they in their chambers, which they heape vp together, with infinite ex-

The commen-
dation of
Antequaries.
Laudamus
veteres, sed
nostris utimur
annis.

pence, and are made beleevue of them that fel them, that they are rare & pretious things, when they haue gathered them vpon some dunghill, or rakte them out of the kennell by chaunce. I know one sold an old rope with foure knots on it for foure pound, in that he gaue it out, it was the length and bredth of Christs Tombe. Let a Tinker take a peece of brasse worth a halfpenny, and set strange stamps on it, & I warrant he may make it more worth to him of some fantastickall foole, than all the kettels that euer he mended in his life. This is the diseafe of our newfangled humorists, that know not what to doo with their welth. It argueth a verie rusty wit, so to doate on worme-eaten Elde.

Out vpon it, how long is Pride a dressing her selfe? Enuie, awake, for thou must appeare before *Nicalao Maleuolo*, great Muster-master of hell. Marke you this The complaint of Enuy. flie mate, how smoothly hee lookes? The Poets were ill aduised that fained him to be a leane, gag-toothd Beldam, with hollow eyes, pale cheeks, and snakie haire: for he is not onely a man, but a iolly lustie olde Gentleman, that will winke, and laugh, and ieast drily, as if he were the honestest of a thousand: and I warrant you shall not heare a foule word come from him in a yeare. I will not contradict it, but the Dog may worry a sheepe

in the dark, and / thrust his necke into the collar of clemencie & pitie when he hath done: as who shoulde say, God forgiue him, hee was a sleepe in the shambles, when the innocent was done to death. But openly, Enuie fets a ciuil, fatherly countenance vpon it, & hath not so much as a drop of bloud in his face, to attaint him of murther. I thought it expedient, in this my Supplication, to place it next to Pride: for it is his adopted sonne: And hence comes it, that proud men repine at others prosperitie, and greeue that any should be great but themselues. *Meus cuiusque, is est quisque;* it is a Prouerbe that is as hoarie as Dutch-butter. If a man wil goe to the diuell, he may go to the diuel: there are a thousand iugling tricks to be vsed at hey passe, come aloft: and the world hath cords enough to trusse vp a calfe that stands in ones way. Enuie is a Crocodile that weeps when he kils, & fightes with none but he feeds on. This is the nature of this quickfighted monster, hee wil endure any paines to endamage another: waft his body with vndertaking exploites that would require ten mens strengths, rather than any should get a penny but himselfe, bleare his eyes to stand in his neighbors light, and to conclude, like *Atlas* vnderproppe heauen, rather than any should be in heauen that he likte not of, or come vnto heauen by any other meanes but by him.

You Goodman wandrer about the world, how doe ye spende your time, that you do not rid vs of these pestilent members? You are vnworthy to haue an office, if you can execute it no better. Behold another enemy of mankind, besides thy selfe, exalted in the South, *Philip* of Spaine: who not contented to be the God of gold, and chiefeft commander of content that Europe affords, but now he doth nothing but thirst after humane bloud, when his foot is on the threshold of the graue: and as a wolfe, beeing about to deuoure a horse, doth balist his belly with earth, that he may hang the heauier vppon him, and then forcibly flies in his face, neuer leauing his hold till he hath eaten him vp: so this woluishe vnnatural vsurper, being about to deuoure all Christendome by inuasion, doth cramme his treasures with Indian earth to make his malice more forcible, and then flies in the bosome of *France & Belgia*, neuer withdrawing his forces (as the Wolfe his fastning) till he hath deuoured their welfare, & made the war-wasted carcases of both kingdoms a pray for his tyrannie. Onely poore *England* giues him bread for his cake, and holds him out at the arms end. His Armados (that like a high wood, ouer-shadowed the shrubbes of our /low ships) fled from the breath of our Cannons, as vapors before the Sunne, or as the

Phillip of
Spayne as
great an
enemy to
mankinde as
the deuill.

Elephant flies from the Ramme, or the Sea-whale from the noyse of parched bones. The winds, enuying that the aire should be dimmed with such a *Chaos* of wodden cloudes, raifed vp high bulwarks of bellowing waues, where Death shotte at their disorderd Nauy: and the Rocks with their ouerhanging iawes, eat vp all the fragments of oake that they left. So perisht our foes, so the Heauens did fight for vs. *Præterit Hippomenes, resonant spectacula plausis.*

I do not doubt (Doctour Diuell) but you were present in this action, or passion rather, and helpt to bore holes in ships to make them sinke faster; and rence out Galley-foists with salt water, that stunke like fustie barrells with their Maisters feare. It will be a good while ere you do as much for the King, as you did for his subiects. I would haue ye perswade an Armie of goutie Vfurers to goe to Sea vppon a boon voyage: trie if you can tempt Enuy to embarke himself in the mal'aduenture, and leaue troubling the streame, that Poets & good fellowes may drinke, & Souldiers sing *Placebo*, that haue murmured so long at the waters of strife.

But that wil neuer bee: for as long as Pride, Riot, and Whoredome are the companions of yoong Courtiers, they wil alwayes bee hungry, and ready to bite at euery Dog that hath a boane

giuen him beside themselves. Iesu, what secret grudge and rancour raignes amongst them, one being ready to dispaire of himself, if he see y^e Prince but giue his fellow a faire looke, or to die for griefe if he be put down in brauery neuer so litle. Yet this custome haue our false harts fetcht from other countries, that they wil sweare & protest loue, where they hate deadly, and smile on him most kindly, whose subuersion in soule they haue vowed. *Fraus sublimi regnat in aula.* Tis rare to finde a true friend in Kings Pallaces: either thou must be so miserable that thou fall into the hands of scornful pitie, or thou canst not escape the sting of enuy. In one thought, assemble the famous men of all ages, and tel me which of them all fate in the sunshine of his soueraignes grace, or wext great of low beginnings, but he was spite-blasted, heaued at, & ill spoken of: and that of those that bare them most countenance. But were enuy nought but words, it might seeme to be onely womens sinne: but it hath a lewd mate hanging on his sleeue, called Murther, a sterne fellowe, that (like a ^{Murder, the} Spaniard in fight) aymeth all at / the ^{companion of} _{Enuie.} heart: hee hath more shapes than *Proteus*, and will shifte himselfe, vpon any occasion of reuengement, into a man's dish, his drinke, his apparell, his rings, his stirrops, his nosegay.

O Italie, the Academie of manflaughter, the sporting place of murther, the Apothecary-shop of poyson for all Nations : Italie the store-house of all murderous inventions. how many kind of weapons hast thou inuented for malice ? Suppose I loue a mans wife, whose husband yet liues, and cannot enioy her for his iealous ouerlooking : Phisicke, or rather, the art of murther, (as it may be vsed) will lend one a Medicine, which shal make him away, in the nature of that disease hee is most subiect to, whether in the space of a yeare, a moneth, halfe a yeere, or what tract of time you will, more or lesse.

In Rome the Papall Chayre is washt, euery siue yeere at the furthest, with this oyle of Aconitum. I pray God, the King of Spayne feasted not our holy father *Sextus*, that was last, with such conferue of Henbane : for it was credibly reported hee loued him not, and this, that is now, is a God made with his owne hands : as it may appeare by the *Pasquil* that was set vp of him, in manner of

The Pasquil that was made vpon this last Pope.

a note, presently after his election, *Sol. Re. Me. Fa.* that is to say, *Solus Rex me facit* ; onely the K. of Spaine made me Pope. I am no Chronicler from our owne Country, but if probable suspition might bee heard

As Cardinal Wolsey, for example.

vpon his oath, I thinke some mens foules would bee canonized for Martyrs, that on the earth did sway it as Monarchies.

Is it your will and pleasure (noble *Lants-graue* of *Lymbo*) to let vs haue leffe carouing to your health in poison, fewer vnder-hand conspirings, or open quarrels executed onely in wordes, as they are in the worlde now a dayes: as if men will needs carouse, conspire, and quarrell, that they may make Ruffians hall of Hell: and there bandy balls of Brimstone at one anothers head, and not trouble our peaceable Paradise with their priuate hurliburlies about strumpets, where no weapon (as in *Adams* Paradise) shold be named: but onely the Angell of prouidence stand with a fiery sword at the gate, to keep out our enemies.

A Perturbation of mind (like vnto Enuy) is Wrath, which looketh farre lower than the former: For, whereas Enuie cannot be saide to bee but in respect of our Superiours, Wrath respecteth no degrees nor persons, but is equally armed agaynst all that offende him. / A harebraind little Dwarfe it is, with a swarth visage, that hath his hart at his tongues end, if he be contraride, and will be sure to do no right nor take no wrong. If hee bee a Iudge or a Iustice (as sometmes the Lyon comes to giue sentence against the Lamb), then he sweares by nothing but by Saint Tyborne, & makes Newgate a Noun Substantiue, whereto

The complaint of Wrath, a branch of Enuie.

Little men for the most part are most angry.

Newgate, a common name for al prisons, as Homo is a

common name for a man or a woman. all his other words are but Adiectiues. Lightly, hee is an olde man : (for those yeares are most wayward and teatish) yet be he neuer so old or so froward, since Auarice likewise is a fellow vice of those fraile yeares, we must set one extreame to striue with another, and alay the anger of oppression by the sweet incense of a newe purse of angels : or the doting Planet may haue such predominance in these wicked Elders of *Israel*, that, if you send your wife, or some other female, to plead for you, she may get your pardon vpon promise of better acquaintance. But whilst, these are the workes of darknesse, and may not be talkt of in the day time : Fury is a heate or fire, & must bee quencht with maides water.

Amongst other cholericke wise Iustices, he was one, that hauing a play presented before him and his Towneship by *Tarlton* and the rest of his fellowes, her Maiesties seruants, and they were now entring into their first merriment (as they call it), the people began exceedingly to laugh, when *Tarlton* first peept out his head. Whereat the Iustice, not a little moued, and seeing with his becket and nods, hee could not make them cease, he went with his staffe, & beat them round about vnmercifully on the bare pates, in that they, being but Farmers and poore countrey hyndes, would presume to laugh at the Queenes

men, & make no more account of her cloath in his prefence.

The causes conducting vnto wrath are as diuers as the actions of a mans life. Some will take on like a mad man, if they see a pigge come to the table. *Sotericus*, the Surgeon, was cholericke at sight of Sturgeon. The Irishman will draw his dagger, and bee ready to kill & slay, if one breake winde in his company : and so some of our English men, that be Souldiers, if one giue them the lye : but these are light matters, whereof *Pierce* complaineth not.

Be aduertised, Master *Os fatidum*, Bedle of the Blackefmithes, that Lawyers cannot deuise which way in the world to begge, they are so troubled with brabblements and futes euery Tearme, of Yeomen and Gentlemen that fall out for nothing. If *Iohn a Nokes* his henne doo but leap into *Elizabeth de Gappes* close, shee will neuer / leaue to haunt her husband, till he bring it to a *Nisi prius*. One while, the Parson sueth the parishioner for bringing home his tythes : another while, the Parishioner sueth the Parson for not taking away his Tythes in time.

I heard a tale of a Butcher, who driuing two Calues ouer a Common, that were coupled together by the neckes with an Oken With, in the way where they should

A merry tale
of a Butcher
& his Calues.

passe, there lay a poore, leane Mare, with a galde backe: to whom they comming (as chance fell out), one of one side, and the other of the other, smelling on her, (as their manner is) the midst of the With that was betwixt their necks rubd her and grated her on the fore backe, that shee started and rose vp, and hung them both on her backe as a beame: which, being but a rough plaister to her raw vlcer, she ran away with them (as she were frantick) into the Fens, where the Butcher could not follow them, and drownde both her selfe and them in a Quagmyre. Now, the owner of the Mare is in law with the Butcher for the losse of his Mare, and the Butcher enterchangably endites him for his Calues. I pray ye, Timothy Tempter, be an Arbitrator betwixt them, & couple them both by the neckes, (as the Calues were) and carry them to Hel on your backe, and then, I hope, they wyll be quiet.

The chiefe spur vnto wrath is Drunkennes, which, as the touch of an Ashen bough, causeth a gidinessse in the Vipers head, and the Batte, lightly strooke with the leafe of a Tree, loseth his remembrance: so they, being but lightly sprinckled with the iuyce of the Hop, become sencelesse, and haue their reason strooken blind, as soone as euer the Cup scaleth the Fortresse of their Nose. Then run their words at random, like a dog that hath

loft his mafter, and are vppe with this man & that man, & generally inuey againft al mē: but thofe that keep a wet corner for a friend, and will not thinke ſcorne to drinke with a good fellowe and a Souldiour: & ſo long do they practiſe this vaine on their Ale-bench, that when they are ſober, they cannot leaue it. There be thofe that get their liuing all the yeere long, by nothing but rayling.

Not farre from *Cheſter*, I knewe an odde foule-mouthde knaue, called *Charles* the Fryer, that had a face ſo parboyled with mens ſpitting on it, and a backe ſo often knighted in *Bridewell*, that it was im-
A tale of one Fryer Charles a foule mouthde knaue.
 poſſible for any ſhame or puniſhment to terrifie him from ill ſpeaking. Noblemen hee would liken to more vgly things than himſelfe: ſome / to Alter my moſt hearty commendations, with a daſh ouer the head: others to guilded chines of beefe, or a ſhoomaker ſweating, when he puls on a ſhoo: another to an old verſe in *Cato*, *Ad conſilium ne acceſſeris, antequam voceris*: another to a Spaniſh Codpiſſe: another, that his face was not yet finiſht, with ſuch like innumerable abſurd alluſions: yea, what was he in the Court but hee had a compariſon inſtead of a Capcaſe to put him in. Vpon a time, being challengde at his owne weapon in a priuate Chamber, by a great perſonage, (rayling, I meane) he ſo far outftript him in villainous words, and

ouer-banded him in bitter tearms, that the name of sport could not perswade him patience, or containe his furie in any degrees of least, but needs he must wreake himselfe vpon him: neyther would a comon reuenge suffise him, his displeasure was so infinite, (and it may be, common reuenges he tooke before, as far as the whipcord would stretch, vpon like prouokements) wherefore he caused his men to take him, and bricke him vp in a narrow chimney, that was *neque major neque minor corpore locato*: where he fed him for fiftene daies with bread and water through a hole, letting him sleepe standing if he would, for lye or sit he could not, and then he let him out to see if he could learne to rule his tongue any better.

It is a disparagement to those that haue any true spark of Gentilitie, to be noted of the whole world so to delight in detracting, that they should keepe a venemous toothde Curre, and feede him with the crums that fall from his table, to do nothing but bite euery one by the shins that passe by. If they will needs be merrie, let them haue a foole, and not a knaue, to disport them, and seeke some other to bestow their almes on, than such an impudent begger.

As there be those that rayle at all men, so there be them that rayle at all Arts, as *Cornelius Agrippa, De vanitate scientiarum*, and a Treatise that I haue

seene in dispraise of learning, where hee faith, it is the corrupter of the simple, the schoolemaster of sin, the storehouse of trecherie, the reuiuer of vices, and mother of cowardize: alledging many examples, how there was neuer man egregiously euill but hee was a Scholler: that when the vse of letters was first inuented, the Golden World ceased, *Facinusque inuasit mortales*: how studie doth effeminate a man, dimme his sight, weaken his braine, and ingender a thousand diseases. Small learning would serue to confute so manifest a scandale, and I imagine all men, like my selfe, so vnmoueablie / resolu'd of the excellencie thereof, that I will not, by the vnderpropping of confutation, seeme to giue the idle-witted aduersary so much encouragement, as he should firmize his superficiall arguments had shaken the foundation of it: against which he could neuer haue lifted his pen if her selfe had not helpt him to hurt herselfe.

With the enemies of Poetry, I care not if I haue a bout, and those are they that tearme our best Writers but babling Ballad-makers, holding them fantastical fooles that haue wit, but cannot tell how to vse it. I my selfe, haue beene so censured among some dul-headed diuines: * who deeme it no more cunning to write an exquisite

An inuectiue
against the
enemies of
Poetrie.

* Absit arro-
gantia, that
this speech

should concerne all diuines, but such dunces as abridge men of their lawfull liberty, & care not how vnprepared they speake to their Auditory.

Poem, than to preach pure *Caluin*, or distill the iuice of a Commentary in a quarter Sermon. Prooue it when you will, you flowe spirited Saturnists, that haue nothing but the pilfries of your penne, to pollish an exhortation withall: no eloquence but Tautologies, to tie the eares of your Auditory vnto you: no inuention but heere is to be noted, I stole this note out of

Beza or *Marlorat*: no wit to moue, no passion to vrge, but onely an ordinary forme of preaching, blowen vp by vse of often hearing and speaking; and you shall finde there goes more exquisite paines and puritie of wit, to the writing of one such rare Poem as *Rosamond*, than to a hundred of your dunsticall Sermons.*

Should we (as you) borrow all out of others, and gather nothing of our selues, our names would be baffuld on euerie Booke-fellers stall, and not a Chandlers Mustard-pot but would wipe his mouth with our wast paper. Newe Herrings, new, we must cry, euery time we make our selues publique, or else we shall be christend with a hundred new titles of Idiotisme. Nor is Poetry an Art whereof there is no vse in a mans whole life, but to describe discontented thoughts and youthfull desires: for there is no study, but it dooth illustrate & beau-

* Such Sermons I meane as our secutaries preach in ditches, and other Conuenticles, when they leape from the Cobblers stall to their pulpits.



tifie. How admirably fhine thofe Diuines about the common mediocritie, that haue tafted the sweet fprings of *Pernaſſus*?

Siluer-tongu'd *Smith*, whofe well tun'd ffile hath made thy / death the generall teares of the Mufes, queintlie couldft thou deuife The vſe of Poetry. heauenly Ditties to *Apolloes* Lute, & teach ftately verſe to trip it as ſmoothly as if *Ouid* & thou had but one ſoule. Hence along did it Encomium H. Smithi. proceede, that thou wert ſuch a plauſible pulpit man: before thou entredft into the wonderfull waies of Theologie, thou refinedft, preparedft, and purifideft thy wings with ſweete Poetrie. If a ſimple mans cenſure may be admitted to ſpeake in ſuch an open Theater of Opinions, I neuer ſaw abundant reading better mixt with delight, or ſentences which no man can challenge of prophane affectation, founding more melodious to the eare, or piercing more deepe to the heart.

To them that demaund, what fruites the Poets of our time bring forth, or wherein they The fruits of Poetry. are able to proue themſelues neceſſarie to the ſtate? Thus I anſwere. Firſt and formoſt, they haue ~~cleaſed our language from barbariſme,~~ and made the vulgar ſort, here in *London*, (which is the fountaine whoſe riuers flowe round about *England*) to aſpire to a richer puritie of ſpeech, than is communicated with the Comminalty of any

Nation vnder heauen. The vertuous by their praises they encourage to be more vertuous, to vicious men they are as infernall hags, to haunt their ghosts with eternall infamie after death. The Souldier, in hope to haue his high deedes celebrated by their pens, despiseth a whole Armie of perills, and acteth wonders exceeding all humane coniecture. Those that care neither for God nor the diuell, by their quills are kept in awe.

Plin. lib. 3.

Multi famam, (saith one) pauci conscientiam verentur.

Let God see what he will, they would be loath to haue the shame of the world. What age wil not prayse immortal Sir Phillip Sidney, whome noble *Salustius* (that thrice finguler french Poet) hath famoused: together with Sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper, & merry Sir Thomas Moore, for the chiefe pillers of our english speech. Not so much but Chaucers host, Baly in Southwarke, and his wife of Bath, he keeps such a stirre with, in his Canterbury tales, shalbe talkt of whilst the Bath is vsed, or there be euer a bad house in Southwarke.

Gen^r/tles, it is not your lay Chronigraphers that write of nothing but of Mayors and Sheriefs, and the deare yeere, and the great Frost, that can endowe your names with neuer dated glory: for they want the wings

The dispraise
of laie chroni-
graphers.

of choise words to fly to heauen, which we haue : they cannot sweeten a discourse, or wrest admiration from men reading, as we can : reporting the meanest accident. Poetry is the hunny of all flowers, the quintessence of all Sciences, the Marrowe of Witte, and the very Phraze of Angels : how much better is it then to haue an eligant Lawier to plead ones cause, than a stutting Townsman, that loseth himselfe in his tale, and dooth nothing but make legs : so much is it better for a Nobleman, or Gentleman, to haue his honours story related, and his deedes emblazond, by a Poet than a Citizen.

Alas poor latinlesse Authors, they are so simple, they knowe not what they doe ; they no sooner spy a new Ballad, and his name to it that compilde it : but they put him in for one of the learned men of our time. I maruell how the Masterlesse men, that set vp their bills in Paules for seruices, and such as paste vp their papers on euery post, for Arithmetique and writing Schooles, scape eternitie amongst them ; I beleue both they and the Knight Marshals men, that naile vp *mandates* at the court gat[e], for annoying the Pallace with filth or making water, if they set their names to the writing, will shortly make vp the number of the learned men of our time, and be as famous as the rest. For my part, I do

challenge no praise of learning to my selfe, yet haue I worne a gowne in the Vniuersitie, and so hath *caret tempus non habet moribus*: but this I dare presume, that, if any *Mecænas* binde mee to him by his bounty, or extend some round liberalitie to mee worth the speaking of, I will doe him as much honour as any Poet of my beardlesse yeeres shall in *England*. Not that I am so confident what I can doe, but that I attribute so much to my thankfull mind aboue others, which I am perswaded would enable me to worke myracles.

On the contrary side, if I bee euill intreated, or sent away / with a Flea in mine eare, let him looke that I will rayle on him soundly: not for an houre or a day, whiles the iniury is fresh in my memory: but in some elaborate, polished Poem, which I will leaue to the world when I am dead, to be a liuing Image to all ages, of his beggerly parsimony and ignoble illiberalitie: and let him not (what foeuer he be) measure the weight of my words by this booke, where I write *Quicquid in buccam venerit*, as fast as my hand can trot: but I haue tearmes (if I be vext) laid in steepe in *Aqua fortis*, and Gunpowder, that shall rattle through the Skyes, and make an Earthquake in a pefants eares. Put case (since I am not yet out of the Theame of

Wrath) that some tired Jade belonging to the Presse, whome I neuer wronged in my life; hath named me expreffely in print (as I will not do him), and accused me of want of learning, vpbraiding me for reuiuing, in an epistle of mine, the reuerend memory of Sir *Thomas Moore*, Sir *John Cheeke*, Doctor *Watson*, Doctor *Haddon*, Doctor *Carre*, Maister *Ascham*, as if they were no meate but for his Masterships mouth, or none but some such, as the sonne of a ropemaker, were worthy to mention them. To shewe how I can rayle, thus would I begin to rayle on him. Thou that hadst thy hood turnd ouer thy eares, when thou wert a Batchelor, for abusing of *Aristotle*, and setting him vp on the Schoole gates, painted with Asses eares on his head: is it any discredit for me, thou great *baboune*, thou *Pigmie Braggart*, thou Pampheter of nothing but *peans*, to bee censured by thee, that hast scorned the Prince of Philosophers; thou, that in thy Dialogues soldst Hunny for a halpenie, and the choycest Writers ex-[t]ant for cues a peece, that cam'st to the Logicke Schooles when thou wert a Fresh-man, and writst phrases; off with thy gowne and vntrusse, for I meane to lash thee mightily. Thou hast a Brother, hast thou

I would tell you in what booke it is, but I am afraid it would make his booke sell in his latter daies, which hetherto hath lien dead, and beene a great losse to the Printer.

Looke at the Chandler's shop, or at the Flaxwiues stall, if you see no tow nor Sope wrapt vp in the title page of such a Pamphlet as Incerti authoris Io Pæan.

not, student in Almanackes? Go to, Ile stand to it, he fatherd one of thy bastards, (a booke I meane) which, being of thy begetting, was set forth vnder his name.

Gentlemen, I am sure you haue hearde of a ridiculous Assé, / that many yeares since sold lyes by the great, & wrote an absurd *astrological Discourse* of the terrible Coniunction of *Saturne* and *Iupiter*, wherein (as if hee had latelie cast the Heauens water, or beene at the anatomizing of the Skies intrails in Surgeons hall) hee prophecieth of such strange wonders to ensue from stars distemperature, & the vniuersal adultery of Planets, as none but he, that is Bawd to those celestiall bodies, could euer discry. What expectation there was of it both in towne & country, the amazement of those times may testifie: and the rather, because he pawned his credit vpon it, in these expresse

tearmes: *If these things fall not out in euery poynt as I haue wrote, let mee for euer hereafter loose the credit of my Astronomie.* Well, so it happend, that he happend not to be a man of his word: his Astronomie broke his day with his creditors, and *Saturne* and *Iupiter* prou'd honeste men than all the World tooke them for: wherevpon, the poore Prognosticator was ready to runne himselfe through with his *Iacob's Staffe*, &

Which at home iwis, was worth a dozen of halters, at least, for if I be not deceiued, his father was a Ropemaker.

cast himselfe headlong from the top of a Globe, (as a mountaine) and breake his necke. The whole Vniuersitie hyft at him, *Tarlton* at the Theator made iests of him, and *Elderton* consumed his ale-crammed nose to nothing, in bear-baying him with whole bundels of ballets. Would you, in likely reason, gesse it were possible for anie shame-fwolne toad to haue the spet-prooffe face to out liue this disgrace? It is, deare brethren, *Vivit, imo vivit*; and which is more, he is a Vicar.

Poor Slaue, I pitie thee that thou hadst no more grace but to come in my way. Why, could not you haue fate quyet at home, and writ Catechismes, but you must be comparing me to *Martin*? and exclaime against me for reckoning vp the high Schollers of worthie memorie? *Iupiter ingenii præbet sua numina vatam*, saith *Ouid*; *Seque celebrari quolibet ore finit*. Which, if it be so, I hope I am *Aliquis*, & those men, *quos honoris causa nominavi*, are not greater than Gods. Methinks, I see thee stand quiuering & quaking, and euen now lift vp thy hands to heauen, as thanking God my choler/is somewhat asswag'd: but thou art deceiued, for howeuer I let fall my stile a little, to talk in reason with thee that hast none, I do not meane to let thee scape so.

Thou hast wronged one for my sake, (whome for the name I must loue) T. N., the Maister

Butler of Pembroke Hall, a farre better Scholler than thy selfe, (in my iudgement) and one that sheweth more discretion and gouernment in setting vp a fise of Bread, than thou in all thy whole booke. Why man, thinke no scorne of him, for he hath held thee vp a hundred times, whiles the Deane hath giuen thee correction, and thou hast capd and kneed him (when thou wert hungry) for a chipping. But thats nothing, for hadst thou neuer beene beholding to him, nor holden vp by him, he hath a Beard that is a better Gentlemã than all thy whole body, and a graue countenance, like *Cato*, able to make thee run out of thy wits for feare, if he looke sternly vpon thee. I haue reade ouer thy Sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, and entreated my patience to bee good to thee whilst I read it: but for al that I could doe with myselfe, (as I am sure I may doe as much as an other man) I could not refraine, but bequeath it to the Priuie, leafe by leafe as I read it, it was so vgly, dorbhellicall, and lamish. Monstrous, monstrous, and palpable, not to be spoken of in a Christian Congregation: thou hast skumd ouer the Schoole men, and of the froth of their folly made a dish of diuinitie Brewesse, which the dogges will not eate. If the Printer haue any great dealings with thee, he were best get a priuiledge betimes, *Ad imprimendũ solum*, forbidding all

other to fell waste paper but himselfe, or else he will be in a wofull taking. The Lambe of God make thee a wiser Bell-weather His owne words. then thou art, for else I doubt thou wilt be driuen to leaue all, and fal to thy fathers occupation, which is, to goe and make a rope to hang thy selfe. *Neque enim Lex æquior ulla est, quam necis artifices arte perire sua:* and so I leaue thee til a better opportunity, to be tormented world without end, of our Poets and Writers about London, whome thou hast called piperly Make-plaies / and Make-bates: not doubting but he also whom thou tearmest the vayn *Pap-hatchet*, wil haue a flurt at thee one day: all ioyntly driuing thee to this issue, that thou shalt bee constrained to goe to the chiefe Beame of thy Benefice, and there beginning a lamẽtable speech with *cur scripsi, cur perii*, end with *pravum prava decent, iuvat inconcessa voluptas*, and with a trice trusse vp thy life in the string of thy Sancebell. So be it, pray Penn, Incke, and paper, on their knees, that they may not be troubled with thee any more.

Redeo ad vos, mei Auditores, haue I not a indifferent pretty veine in spurgalling an Affe? if you knew how extemporall it were at this instant, and with what hast it is writ, you would say so. But I would not haue you thinke, that al this that is fet downe heere, is in good earnest, for then you

goe by *S. Gyles*, the wrong way to *Westminster*: but onely to shew how for a neede I could rayle, if I were throughly fyred. So ho, *Honiger Hammon*: where are you al thys while, I cannot be acquainted with you? Tell me, what doe you thinke of the case? am I subiect to the sinne of Wrath I write against, or no, in whetting my penne on this block? I know you would faine haue it so, but it shal not choose but be otherwise for this once. Come on: let vs turne ouer a new leafe, and heare what Gluttony can say for her selfe, for Wrath hath spet his poyson, and full platters doe well after extreame purging.

The Romaine Emperours that succeeded *Augustus* were exceedingly giuen to this horrible vice, whereof some of them would feede on nothing but the tongues of Phefants and Nightingales: other, would spend as much at one banquet, as a Kings reuenues came too in a yeare: whose excesse I would decypher at large, but that a new Laureat hath fau'd me the labor: who, for a man that stands vpon paines & not wit, hath performd as much, as anie Storie dresser may doo, that sets a new English nap on an olde Latine Apotheqs. It is enough for me to licke dishes here at home, though I feede not mine eyes at anie of the Ro/mane feasts. Much good doo it you, Master *Dives*, here in

The com-
plaint of
Gluttonie.

London: for you are he my pen meanes to dine withall. *Miserere mei*, what a fat churle it is? Why, he hath a belly as big as the round Church in *Cambridge*, a face as huge as the whole bodie of a bafe viall, and legs that, if they were hollow, a man might keepe a mill in either of them. *Experto crede Roberto*, there is no mast like a Marchaunts table. *Bonâ fide*, it is a great misture, that we haue not men fwine as well as beasts, for then we should haue porke that hath no more bones than a pudding, and a side of bacon that you might lay vnder your head in stead of a bolster.

It is not for nothing that other Countries, whome wee vpbraid with Drunkenesse, call vs bursten-bellied Gluttons: for we make our greedie paunches powdring tubs of beefe, and eate more meat at one meale, than the Spaniard or Italian in a month. Good thriftie men, they drawe out a dinner with fallets, like a *Swart-rutters* fute, and make *Madona* Nature their best Caterer. We must haue our Tables furnisht like Poultrers stalls, or as though we were to victuall *Noahs* Arke againe, (wherein there was al sorts of liuing creatures that euer were) or els the good-wife wil not open her mouth to bid one welcome. A stranger that should come to one of our *Magnificoes* houses, when dinner were set on

Nature in England is but plaine Dame, but in Sp[an]e and Italy (because they haue more vse of her than we) she is dubbed a Lady.

the boord, and he not yet fet, would think the goodman of the house were a Haberdasher of Wilde-fowle, or a Merchant venturer of daintie meate, that fells commodities of good cheere by the great, and hath Factors in *Arabia, Turkey, Egipt,* and *Barbarie*, to provide him of strange Birdes, *China* mustard, and odde paterns to make Custards by.

Lord, what a coyle haue we, with this Course and that Course, remoouing this dish higher, setting another lower, and taking away the third. A Generall might in lesse space remoue his Camp, than they stand disposing of their Gluttonie. And whereto tends all this gurmandise, but to giue sleepe grosse humors to feede on, to corrupt the braine, and make it vnapt and vnweldie for anie thing?

The / Romane Censors, if they lighted vpon a fat corpulent man, they straight tooke away his horse, and constrained him to goe a foote: positiuely concluding his carkasse was so puft vp with gluttony or idleneffe. If wee had such horse-takers amongst vs, and that surfit-swolne Churles, who now ride on their foot-cloathes, might bee constrained to carrie their flesh budgets from place to place on foote, the price of veluet and cloath would fall with their bellies, and the gentle craft (*alias* the red herrings kinsmen) get more, &

drinke leffe. *Plenus venter nil agit libenter, & plures gula occidit quam gladius.* It is as desperate a peece of seruice to sleepe vpon a full stomacke, as it is to serue in face of the bullet: a man is but his breath, and that may as wel be stopt by putting too much in his mouth at once, as rüning on the mouth of the Cannon. That is verified of vs, which *Horace* writes of an outrageous eater in his time, *Quicquid quæserat ventri donabat avaro,* Whatsoeuer he could rap or rend, he confiscated to his couetous gut. Nay, we are such flesh-eating Saracens, that chaff fish may not content vs, but we delight in the murder of innocent mutton, in the vnpluming of pullerie, and quartering of calues and oxen. It is horrible and detestable, no godly Fishmonger that can digest it. Report (which our moderners clepe flundering Fame) puts mee in memorye of a notable iest I heard long agoe of Doctor *Watson*, verie conducible to the reproofe of these fleshly-minded *Belials*. He being at supper, on a fasting or fish night at least, with a great number of his freinds and acquaintance, there chaunced to be in the company an outlandish doctor, who, when all other fell to such victuals (agreeing to the time) as were before them, he ouerslipt them; and there being one ioynt of flesh on the table for such as

A rare wittie
iest of Doctor
Watsons.

Or rather
belly-alls, be-
cause all their
minde is on
their belly.

had meate stomackes, fell freshly to it. After that hunger (halfe conquered) had restored him to the vse of his speach, for his excuse he said to his friend that brought him thither, *Profec̃tò, Domine, ego sum malissimus piscator*, meaning by *piscator*, a Fishman: (which is a libertie, as also *malissimus*, that outlandish men in their familiar talke doo challenge, at least vse, aboue / vs). *At tu es bonissimus carnifex*, quoth Doctor *Watson*, retorting very merrily his owne licentious figures vpon him. So of vs it may be said, we are *Malissimi piscatores*, but *bonissimi carnifices*. I would English the iest, for the edification of the temporaltie, but that it is not so good in English as in Latine: and though it were as good, it would not conuert clubs and clowted shoone from the flesh-pots of *Egipt*, to the Prouant of the Lowe countreyes: they had rather (with the Seruing-man) put vp a supplication to the Parliament house, that they might haue a yard of pudding for a penie, than desire (with the Baker) there might bee three ounces of bread fold for a halfe penie.

Alphonsus, King *Philips* Confessor, that came ouer with him to *England*, was such a moderate man in his dyet, that he would feede but once a day, and at that tyme hee would feed so slenderly and sparingly, as scarce serued to keep life and soule together.

The moderation of Fryer
Alphonso,
King Phillips
Confessor.

One night, importunately invited to a solemne banquet, for fashon sake he fate downe among the rest, but by no entreatie could be drawn to eat any thing: at length, frute being set on the boord, he reacht an apple out of the dish, and put it in his pocket, which one marking, that fate right ouer against him, askt him, *Domine, cur es sollicitus in crastinum?* Sir, *why are you carefull for the morrow?* Whereto he answered most soberly, *Imo hoc facio, mi amice, ut ne sim sollicitus in crastinum.* No, I doo it, my frind, that I may not be carefull for the morrow: as though his appetite were a whole day contented with so little as an apple, and that it were enough to pay the morrowes tribute to Nature.

Rare, and worthie to be registred to all posterities, is the Countie Molines (sometime the Prince of *Parmaes* companion) altered course of life, who being a man that liued in as great pompe and delicacie as was possible for a man to doo, and one that wanted nothing but a kingdome that his heart could desire. Vpon a day entering into a deepe melancholy by himselfe, hee fell into a discoursiue consideration what this world was, how vaine and transitorie the pleasures/thereof, and how many times he had offended God by sur-fetting, gluttony, drunkennes, pride, whoredome,

The strange alteration of the Countie Molines, the Prince of Parmaes Companion.

& such like, and how hard it was for him, that liu'd in that prosperitie that he did, not to bee entangled with those pleasures: whereupon he presently resolu'd, twixt God and his owne conscience, to forsake it and al his allurements, and betake him to his feuerest forme of life vsed in their state. And with that cald all his Souldiers and acquaintance together, and, making knownen his intent vnto them, he distributed his liuing and possessions (which were infinite) amongst the poorest of them: and hauing not left himselfe the worth of one farthing vnder heauen, betooke him to the most beggerlie new erected Order of the Fryer Capuchines. Their Institution is, that they shall possesse nothing whatsoeuer of their owne, more than the cloathes on their backes, continually to go bare foote, weare haire shirts, and lie vpon the hard bords, winter & summer time: they must haue no meat, nor aske any but what is giuen thē voluntarily, nor must they lay vp from any meale to meale, but giue it to y^e poore, or els it is a great penaltie. In this feure humilitie liues this deuout Countie, and hath done this foure yeare, submitting himselfe to al the base drudgery of the house, as fetching water, making cleane the rest of their chambers, insomuch as he is the *Junior* of the Order. O what a notable rebuke were his honourable Lowlines to succeeding pride, if this

prostrate spirit of his were not the seruaunt of Superstition: or hee misspent not his good workes on a wrong Faith.

Let but our English belly-gods punish their purfie bodies with this strict penaunce, and professe the Capuchinisme but one month, and Ile be their pledge, they shall not grow so like dry-fats as they doo. O it will make them iolly long-winded, to trot vp and downe the Dorter staires, and the water-tankard will keepe vnder the insurrection of their shoulders, the haire shirt will chafe whordome out of their boanes, and the hard lodging on the boards, take their flesh downe a button hole lower.

But /if they might be induced to distribute all their goods amongst the poore, it were to be hoped Saint *Peter* would let them dwell in the suburbes of heauen, whereas, otherwise, they must keepe aloofe at *Pancredge*, and not come neere the liberties by fise leagues and aboue. It is your dooing (*Diotrephes* Diuell) that these stal-fed cormorants to damnation, must bung vp all the welth of the Land in their snap-haunce bags, and poore Schollers and Souldiers wander in backe lanes, and the out-shiftes of the Citie, with neuer a rag to their backes: but our trust is, that by some intemperance or other, you will tourne vp their heeles one of these yeares together, and prouide them of

such vnthrifts to their heires, as shall spend in one weeke amongst good fellowes what they got by extortion and opression from Gentlemen all their life-time.

From Gluttonie in meates, let me discend to
The cōplaint of drunkennes. superfluitie in drink: a sinne, that euer
 since we haue mixt our selues with the
 Low-countries, is counted honourable: but before
 we knew their lingring warres, was held in y^e
 highest degree of hatred that might be. Then,
 if wee had seene a man goe wallowing in the
 streetes, or lye sleeping vnder the boord,
 we would haue spet at him as a toade,
 and cald him foule drunken swine, and
 warnd all our friends out of his company:
 now, he is no body that cannot drinke
Drinking super nagulum, a deuise of drinking new come out of Fraunce; which is, after a man hath turnd vp the bottom of the cup, to drop it on hys naile, and make a pearle with that is left; which, if it slide, and he cannot mak stand on, by reason thers too much, he must drinke againe for his penance. *super nagulum*, carouse the Hunters hoop,
 quaffe *vpsey freze crosse*, with leapes gloues,
 mumpes, fro[l]ickes, and a thousand such
 dominiering inuentions. He is reputed
 a pefaunt and a boore that will not take
 his licour profoundly. And you shall
 heare a Caulier of the first feather, a
 princookes that was but a Page the other
 day in the Court, and now is all to be frenchified
 in his Souldiers sute, stand vpon termes with God's
 wounds, you dishonour me fir, you do me the dis-
 grace if you do not pledge me as much as I drunke

to you: and, in the midst of his cups, stand vaunting his manhood, beginning euery sentence, with when I first bore Armes, when he neuer bare any thing but his Lords rapier after him in his / life. If he haue beene ouer, and visited a towne of Garrison, as a traualer or passenger, he hath as great experience as the greatest Commander and chiefe Leader in *England*. A mightie deformer of mens manners and features, is this vnneccessary vice of all other. Let him bee indued with neuer so many vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour, as nature can bestow vpon a man: yet if hee be thirftie after his owne destruction, and hath no ioy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his soule in a gallon pot, that one beastly imperfection wil vtterly obscure all that is commendable in him: and all his good qualities sinke like lead downe to the bottome of his carrowing cups, where they will lie, like lees and dregges, dead and vnregarded of any man.

Clim of the clough, thou that vset to drinke nothing but scalding lead and fulpher in hell, thou art not so greedie of thy night geare. O, but thou hast a foule swallow, if it come once to carousing of humane bloud: but thats but seldome once in seauen yeare, when theres a great execution, otherwise thou art tide at rack and manger, and drinkst nothing but the *Aqua vitæ* of vengeance all thy

life time. The Prouerbe giues it foorth, thou art a knaue, and therefore I haue more hope thou art some manner of a good fellowe: let mee intreate thee (since thou hast other iniquities inough to circumuent vs withall) to wipe this sinne out of the catalogue of thy subtiltie: helpe to blast the Vines, that they may beare no more grapes, and fowre the wines in the cellars of Marchants store-houfes, that our Countreymen may not pisse out all their wit and thrift against the walles. King King Edgars ordinance against drinking. *Edgar*, because his subiects should not offend in swilling, & bibbing, as they did, caused certaine iron cups to be chained to euery fountaine and wells side, and at euery Vintners doore, with iron pins in them, to flint euery man how much he should drinke: and he that went beyond one of those pins forfeited a penny for euery draught. And, if Stories were well searcht, I beleue hoops in quart pots were inuented to that ende, that euery man should take his hoope, and no more. / I haue heard it iustified for a trueth by great Personages, that the olde The Wonderfull abstinence of the Marques of Pisana, yet liuing. *Marquesse of Pisana* (who yet liues) drinks not once in seauen yeare: and I haue read of one *Andron of Argos*, that was so sildome thirstie, that he trauailed ouer the hot burning sands of *Lybia*, & neuer dranke. Then, why should our colde Clime bring

foorth fuch fierie throates? Are we more thirstie than *Spaine* and *Italy*, where the Sunnes force is doubled? The *Germaines* and lowe Dutch, me thinkes, should bee continually kept moyft with the foggie aire and stinking mistes that arise out of their fennie soyle: but as their Countrey is ouerflowen with water, so are their heads alwaies ouerflowen with wine, and in their bellies they haue standing quag-mires & bogs of English beere.

One of their breede it was that writ the Booke, *De Arte bibendi*, a worshipfull treatise, fitte for none but *Silenus* and his Assé to set forth: besides that volume, we haue generall rules and iniunctions, as good as printed precepts, or Statutes set downe by Acte of Parliament, that goe from drunkard to drunkard; as still to keepe your first man, not to leaue any flockes in the bottome of the cup, to knock the glasse on your thumbe when you haue done, to haue some shooing horne to pull on your wine, as a rasher of the coles, or a redde herring, to stirre it about with a candles ende to make it taste better, and not to holde your peace whiles the pot is stirring.

Nor haue we one or two kinde of drunkards onely, but eight kindes. The first is Ape drunke, and he leapes, and sings, and hollowes, and daunceth for the heauens: the second is Lion drunke, and he flings the pots

The priuate
lawes
amongst
drunkards.

The eight
kindes of
drunkenesse.

about the house, calls his Hofteffe whore, breakes the glasse windowes with his dagger, and is apt to quarrell with any man that speaks to him: the third is Swine drunke; heauy, lumpish, and sleepeie, and cries for a little more drinke, and a fewe more cloathes: the fourth is Sheepe drunke, wife in his own cōcept, when he cannot bring foorth a right word: the fifth is Mawdlen drunke; when a fellow wil weepe for kindnes in the / midft of his Ale, and kisse you, saying, By God, Captaine, I loue thee: goe thy waies, thou dost not thinke so often of me as I do of thee, I would (if it pleased God) I could not loue thee so well as I doo: and then he puts his finger in his eie, and cries: the sixt is Martin drunke, when a man is drunke, and drinks himselfe sober ere he stirre: the seuenth is Goate drunke, when, in his drunkennes, he hath no minde but on Lecherie: the eighth is Fox drunke, when he is craftie drunke, as manie of the Dutchmen bee, [that] will neuer bargaine but when they are drunke. All these *species*, and more, haue I seen practised in one Companie at one fitting, when I haue been permitted to remaine sober amongst them, onely to note their feuerall humors. Hee that plies any one of them harde, it will make him to write admirable verses, and to haue a deepe casting heade, though hee were neuer so very a Dunce before.

Gentlemen, all you that will not haue your
 braines twife foddén, or your flesh rotten
 with the Dropſie, that loue not to goe The diſcom-
 modities of
 drunkennes.
 in greaſie dublets, ſtockings out at the
 heeles, and weare ale-houſe daggers at your backes,
 forſweare this flauering brauery, that will make
 you haue ſtinking breathes, and your bodies ſmell
 like Brewers' aprons: rather keepe a ſnuffe in the
 bottome of the glaſſe to light you to bed withall,
 than leaue neuer an eye in your head to lead you
 ouer the threſhold. It will bring you, in your olde
 age, to be companions with none but Porters and
 Car-men, to talke out of a Cage, rayling as dronken
 men are wont, a hundred boyes wondering about
 them; and to dye ſodainly, as *Fol Long*, the
 Fencer, did, drinking *Aqua vitæ*. From which
 (as all the reſt) good Lord deliuer *Pierce Peni-
 leſſe*.

The nurſe of this enormitie (as of all euills) is
 Idlenes, or ſloth, which, hauing no pain- The cõplaint
 of Sloth.
 ful Proui[de]nce to ſet him ſelfe a worke,
 runnes headlong, with the raines in his own hand,
 into all laſciuioſneſſe and ſenſualitie that may bee.
 Men, / when they are idle, and know not what to
 do, ſaith one, Let vs goe to the Stilliard, and drinke
 Rheniſh wine. Nay, if a man knew where a good
 whorhouſe wer, ſaith another, it were ſomewhat like.
 Nay, ſaith the third, let vs go to a dicing houſe or

a bowling alley, and there we shall haue some sport for our money. To one of these three (at hand, quoth pick-purse) your euil Angelfhip, maister mani-headed beaft, conducts them, *Vbi quid agitur* —betwixt you and their foules be it, for I am no Drawer, Box-keeper, or Pander, to bee priuie to their sports. If I were to paint Sloth, (as I am not sene in the sweetenings) by Saint *Iohn* the Euangelist, I sweare I would draw it like a Stationer that I knowe, with his thumb vnder his girdle, who if a man come to his stall and aske him for a booke, neuer stirs his head, or looks vpon him, but stands stone still, and speaks not a word: only with his little finger points backwards to his boy, who must be his interpreter, and so al the day, gaping like a dumbe image, he sits without motion, except at such times as he goes to dinner or supper: for then he is as quicke as other three, eating fixe times every day. If I would raunge abroad, and looke in at sluggards key-holes, I should finde a number lying a bed to faue charges of ordinaries, & in winter, when they want firing, losing halfe a weeks Commons together, to keepe them warme in the linnen. And hold you content, this Summer an vnder-meale of an afternoone long doth not amisse to exercise the eies withall. Fat men and Farmers sonnes, that sweate much with eating

Videlicet, before he come out of his bed, then a set breakfast, the dinner, then after noones nunchings, a supper, and a resupper.

harde cheefe, and drinking olde wine, muſt haue ſome more eaſe than yong boyes, that take their pleaſure all day running vp and downe.

Setting ieſting aſide, I hold it a great diſputable queſtion, which is a more euil man, of him that is an idle glutton at home, or a retchleſſe vnthrift abroad? The glutton at home doth nothing but engender diſeaſes, pamper his fleſh vnto luſt, and is good for none but his owne gut: the vnthrift abroad exerciſeth his bodie at dauncing ſchoole, fence ſchoole, tennis, and all ſuch recreations: the vintners, the victuallers, / the dicing-houſes, and who not, get by him. Suppoſe he loſe a little now and then at play, it teacheth him wit: and how ſhould a man know to eſchue vices, if his owne experience did not acquaint him with their inconueniences? *Omne ignotum pro magnifico eſt*: that villainie we haue made no affayes in, we admyre. Befides, my vagrant Reueller haunts Playes, and ſharpens his wits with frequenting the company of Poets: he emboldens his bluſhing face by courting faire women on the ſodaine, and lookes into all Eſtates by conuerſing with them in publike places. Nowe tell me whether of theſe two, the heauy headed gluttonous houſe doue, or this liuely, wanton, young Gallant, is like to prooue the wiſer man, and better member in the Common wealth? If

Which is
better of the
idle glutton,
or vagrant
vnthrift?

my youth might not be thought partiall, the fine qualified Gentleman, although vnstaid, should carie it clean away from the lazie clownish droane.

Sloth in Nobilitie, Courtiers, Schollers, or any The effects of sloth. men, is the chiefeft cause that brings them in contempt. For, as industrie and vnfatigable toyle raifeth meane persons from obscure houfes to high thrones of authoritie: so Sloath, and fluggish security, causeth proud Lordes to tumble from the towers of their starry difcents, and bee trod vnder foote of euery inferior Befonian. Is it the lofty treading of a Galliard, or fine grace in telling of a loue tale amongft Ladies, can make a man reuerent of the multitude? no, they care not for the false glistering of gay garments, or insinuating curtesie of a carpet Peere; but they delight to see him shine in Armour, and oppose himfelfe to honourable daunger, to participate a voluntarie penie with his souldiers, and relieue part of their wante out of his owne purse. That is the course he that will be popular must take, which, if he neglect, and sit dallying at home, nor will be awakke by any indignities out of his loue-dream, but suffer euery vpstart groome to defie him, set him at naught, and shake him by the beard vn-reuengde, let him straight take orders, and bee a Church-man, and then his patience may passe for a vertue: but otherwise, to be suspected of cowardise,

and not car'd for of /any. The onely enimie to Sloth, is contention and emulation; as The means to auoyde Slouth. to propofe one man to my felfe, that is the onely myrrour of our Age, and ftriue to outgoe him in vertue. But this ftrife muft be fo tempred, that we fal not from the eagernesse of prayfe, to the enuying of their perfons: for, then, we leaue running to the goale of glory, to fperne at a ftone that lies in our way; and fo did *Atlante*, in the middeft of her courfe ftoupe to take vp the golden apple y her enimie fattered in her way, and was out-runne by *Hippomenes*. The contrary to this contention, & emulation, is fecuritie, peace, quiet, tranquillitie: when we haue no aduerfary to prie into our actions, no malicious eye, whose purfuing our priuate behauiour, might make vs more vigilant ouer our imperfections, than otherwise we would be.

That State or Kingdome that is in league with all the World, and hath no forraine fword to vexe it, is not half fo ftrong or confirmed to endure, as that which liues every houre in feare of inuafion. There is a certaine wafte of the people for whom there is no vfe, but warre: and thefe men muft haue fome employment ftill to cut them off. *Nam fi foras hoftem non habent, domi inuenient*. If they haue no feruice abroad, they will make mutinies at home. Or if the affayres of the State be fuch, as

cannot exhale all these corrupt excrements, it is very expedient they haue some light toyes to bufie their heades withall, to cast before them as bones to gnaw vppon, which may keepe them from hauing leasure to intermeddle with higher matters.

To this effect, the pollicie of Playes is verie necessary, howfoeuer some shallow-braind cenfurers (not the deepeft serchers into the secrets of gouernment) mightily oppugne them. For whereas the after-noone being the idlest time of the day; wherein men that are their owne masters, (as Gentlemen of the Court, the Innes of the Court, and the number of Captaines and Souldiers about *London*) doo wholly bestow themselves vpon pleasure, and that pleasure they deuide (how vertuously it skilles not) either into gameing, following of harlots, drinking, or seeing a Play: is it not / then better (since of foure extreames all the world cannot keepe them but they will choose one) that they should betake them to the least, which is Playes? Nay, what if I prooue Playes to be no extreame; but a rare exercise of vertue? First, for the subiect of them (for the most part) it is borrowed out of our English Chronicles, wherein our forefathers valiant actes (that haue lien long buried in rustie brasse and worme-eaten bookes) are reuiued, and they themselves rayfed from the Graue of Obluion, and brought to pleade their

The defēce
of Playes.

aged Honours in open presence: than which, what can be a sharper reproofe to these degenerate effeminate dayes of ours?

How would it haue ioyed braue *Talbot* (the terror of the French) to thinke that after he had liven two hundred yeare in his Toomb, he should triumph againe on the Stage, and haue his bones new embalmed with the teares of ten thousand spectators at least, (at severall times) who, in the Tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding.

I will defend it against anie *Collian*, or clubbited *Vfurer* of them all, there is no immortalitie can be giuen a man on earth like vnto Playes. What talke I to them of immortalitie, that are the onely vnderminers of Honour, & doe enuie any man that is not sprung vp by base Brokerie like themselves. They care not if all the auncient Houses were rooted out, so that, like the *Burgomasters* of the Low countries, they might share the gouernment amongst them as States, & be quarter-masters of our Monarchie. All Arts to them are vanitie: and, if you tell them what a glorious thing it is to haue *Henry* the fifth represented on the Stage, leading the French King prisoner, and forcing both him and the Dolphin to sweare fealty. I, but (will they say) what doo we get by it? respecting neither the right of Fame that is due to true

Nobilitie deceas'd, nor what hopes of eternitie are to be propos'd to aduentrous mindes, to encourage them forward, but onely their execrable lucre, & filthy vnquenchable auarice.

They / know when they are dead they shal not be brought vpon the Stage for any goodnes, but in a merriment of the Vfuror and the Diuel, or buying Armes of the Herald, who giues them the Lyon, without tongue taylor or tallents, because his master whom he must serue is a Townesman, and a man of peace, and must not keepe any quarrelling beasts to annoy his honest neighbours.

In Playes, all coosonages, all cunning drifts ouerguylded with outward holinesse, all The vse of Playes. stratagems of warre, all the canker-wormes that breede on the rust of peace, are most liuely anatomiz'd: they shew the ill successe of treason, the fall of hasty climbers, the wretched ende of vsurpers, the miserie of ciuil diffention, and how iust God is euermore in punishing of murther. And to prooue euery one of these allegations, could I propound the circumstances of this play and that play, if I meant to handle this Theame other wise than *obiter*. What should

The confutation of Citizens obiections against Players. I say more? they are sower pills of reprehension, wrapt vp in sweete words. Wheras some Petitioners to the Counsaile against them obiect, they corrupt the youth of

the Citie, and withdrawe Prentises from their worke; they heartely wish they might be troubled with none of their youth nor their prentises; for some of them (I meane the ruder handicraftes seruants) neuer come abroad, but they are in danger of vndoing: and as for corrupting them when they come, thats false; for no Play they haue, encourageth any man to tumults or rebellion, but layes before such the halter and the gallowes; or prayseth or approoueth pride, lust, whoredome, prodigalitie, or drunkennes, but beates them downe vtterly. As for the hindrance of Trades and Traders of the Citie by them, that is an Article foysted in by the vintners, ale-wiues, and victuallers, who furnise, if there were no Playes, they should haue all the companie that resort to them, lye bowzing and beere-bathing in their houses euery after-noone. Nor so, nor so, good brother bottle-ale, for there are other places beside where money can bestow it selfe: the signe of the smocke will wye your mouth clean: and yet I haue heard ye haue made / her a tenant to your tap-houses. But what shall he doo that hath spent himselfe? where shall he haunt? Faith, when dice, lust, and drunkennes, and all haue dealt vpon him, if there bee neuer a Play for him to goe to for his penie, he sits melancholie in his chamber, deuising vpon felonie or treason,

and howe hee may best exalt himselfe by mischief.

In *Augustus* time (who was the Patron of all witty sports) there happened a great Fray in *Rome* about a Plaier, infomuch as all the Citie was in an vprore : whereupon the Emperour (after the broyle was somewhat ouer-blown) cald the Player before him, and askt what was the reason that a man of his qualitie durst presume to make such a brawle about nothing. He smilingly replyde, *It is good*

A Players
wittie answer
to Augustus.

*for thee O Cæsar, that the peoples heades
are troubled with brawles and quarrels
about vs and our light matters : for other-
wise they would looke into thee and thy matters.*

Read *Lipsius* or any prophane or Christian Politician, and you shal finde him of this opinion.

A comparison
twixt our
Players and
the Players
beyond the
Sea.

Our Players are not as the players beyond sea, a sort of squirting baudie Comedians, that haue whores and common Curtizans to play womens parts, and forbear no immodest speech or vnchast action that may procure laughter ; but our Sceane is more stately furnisht than euer it was in the time of *Roscius*, our representations honorable, and full of gallant resolution, not consisting, like theirs, of a Pantaloun, a Whore, and a Zanie, but of Emperours, Kings, and Princes : whose true Tragedies (*Sophocleo cothurno*) they doo vaunt.

Not *Rofcius* nor *Æfope*, thofe Tragedians admyred before Chrift was borne, could euer performe more in action than famous *Ned Allen*. I muft accufe our Poets of floth and partialitie, that they will not boaft in large impreffions what worthy men (aboue all Nations) *England* affords. Other Countries cannot haue a Fidler breake a ftring but they will put it in print, and the olde *Romanes* in the writings they published, thought fcorne to vfe any but domeftical examples of their owne home-bred Actors, Schollers, / and Champions, and them they would extoll to the third and fourth Generation: Coblers, Tinkers, Fencers, none efcapt them, but they mingled them all on one Gallimafrey of glory.

Heere I haue vfed a like Methode, not of tying my felfe to mine owne Countrey, but by infifting in the experience of our time: and, if I euer write any thing in Latine, (as I hope one day I fhall) not a man of any defert here amongft vs, but I will haue vp. *Tarlton, Ned Allen, Knell, Bentlie*, fhall be made knowen to *France, Spaine, and Italie*: and not a part that they furmounded in, more than other, but I will there note and fet downe, with the manner of their habites and attyre.

The child of Sloth is Lecherie, which I haue plac't laft in my order of handling: a finne that

is able to make a man wicked that should describe
 it; for it hath more starting-holes than a
 The seuēnth
 and last
 complaint, of
 Lechery. five hath holes, more Clyents than *West-*
minster-hall, more diseases than *Newgate*.

Call a Leete at *Byshopsgate*, & examine how euery
 second house in *S[h]orditch* is mayntayned: make
 a priuie search in *Southwarke*, and tell mee how
 many Shee-Inmates you finde: nay, goe where
 you will in the Suburbes, and bring me two
 Virgins that haue vowd Chastity, and Ile builde
 a Nunnery.

Westminster, *Westminster*, much maydenhead hast
 thou to answere for at the day of Judgement.
 Thou hadst a Sanctuary in thee once, but hast
 few Saints left in thee now. Surgeons and Ap-
 pothecaries, you know what I speake is true; for
 you liue (like Sumners) vpon the finnes of the
 people; tell me is there any place so lewde as this
 Ladie *London*? Not a Wench sooner creepes out
 of the shell, but she is of the Religion. Some
 wiues will sowe Mandrake in their gardens, and
 croffe-neighbourhoode with them is counted good-
 fellowship.

The Court I dare not touch, but surely there (as
 in the Heauens) bee many falling starres, and but
 one true *Diana*. *Consuetudo peccandi tollit sensum*
peccati. Custome is a Lawe, and / Lust holdes it
 for a Lawe, to liue without Lawe. *Lais*, that had

so many Poets to her Louers, could not allwayes preferue her beauty with their prayfes. Marble will weare away with much raine: Gold wil rust with moyft keeping: & the ritcheft garments are subiect to Times Moath-frets; *Clitemnestra*, that flew her husband to enioye the Adulturer *Ægistus*, and bathde herselfe in Milke euery day to make her young agayne, had a time when shee was ashamed to viewe herselfe in a looking glasse, and her body withered, her minde being greene. The people poynted at her for a murtherer, young children howted at her as a strumpet: shame, misery, sicknesse, beggery, is the best end of vncleannesse.

Lais, Cleopatra, Helen, if our Clyme had any such, noble Lord warden of the Wenches & Anglers, I commend them with the rest of our vncleane sisters in *Shorditch, the Spittle, Southwarke, Westminster, and Turnbull streete*, to the protection of your Portership: hoping you will speedily carrie them to hell, there to keepe open house for all young diuels that come, and not let our ayre bee contaminated with theyr fixpenie damnation any longer.

Your Diuelships

bounden execrator,

Pierce Penileffe.

A / Supplication calst thou this? (quoth the Knight of the post) it is the maddest Supplication that euer I sawe; me thinkes thou hast handled all the seauen deadly finnes in it, and spared none that exceeds his limites in any of them. It is wel done to practife thy witte, but (I beleue) our Lord will cun thee little thanke for it.

The worfe for me (quoth I), if my destinie be such, to lose my labour euery where, but I meane to take my chance, be it good or bad. Wel, hast thou any more that thou wouldest haue me to doo? (quoth hee) Onely one sute, (quoth I) which is this, that sith opportunitie so conueniently serues, you would acquaint me with the state of your infernal regiment: and what that hel is, where your Lord holdes his throne; whether a world like this, which spirites like outlawes doo inhabit, who, being banisht from heauen, as they are from their Countrie, enuie that any shall bee more happy than they: and therefore seeke all meanes possible, that Wit or Arte may inuent, to make other men as wretched as themselues: or, whether it be a place of horror, stench, and darknesse, where men see meat, but can get none, or are euer thirstie, and ready to swelt for drinke, yet haue not the power to tast the coole streames that runne hard at their feete: where (*permutata vicissitudine*) one Ghost

torments an other by turnes, and hee that al his life time was a great fornicator, hath all the diseases of lust continually hanging vpon him, and is constrained (the more to augment his misery) to haue congresse euery howre with haggés and olde witches: and he that was a great drunkard heere on earth, hath his penance assignde him, to carouse himselfe drunke with dishwash and Vineger, and surfet foure times a day with fower Ale and small Beere: as so of the rest, as the vsurer to swallow moulten golde, the glutton to eate nothing but toades, and the Murtherer too be still stabd with daggers, but neuer die: or whether (as some phantastical refyners of philosophie will needes perswade vs) hell is nothing but error, and that none but fooles and Idiotes and Mechani / call men, that haue no learning, shall be damnd: of these doubts if you will resolue me, I shall thinke my self to haue profited greatly by your companie.

He hearing me so inquisitiue in matters aboue humane capacitie, entertained my greedie humor with this answere. Poets and Philosophers, that take a pride in inuenting new opinions, haue sought to renoume their wits by hunting after strange conceits of heauen and hell; all generally agreeing, that such places there are, but how inhabited, by whom gouerned, or what betides them that are transported to the one or other, not two of

them iumpe in one tale. We, that to our terror and grieffe doe knowe their dotage by our sufferings, reioyce to thinke how these fillie flyes play with the fire that must burne them.

But leauing them to the Laborynth of their fond curiositie, shall I tell thee in a word what Hell is? It is a place where y^e foules of vntemperate men, & ill liuers of al sorts, are detayned and imprisoned till the generall Resurrection, kept and possessed chiefly by spirites, who lye like Souldiours in Garrison, readie to be sent about any seruice into the world, whensoever *Lucifer*, their Lieftenaunt Generall, pleaseth. For the scituation of it, in respect of heauen, I can no better compare it than to *Callis* and *Douer*: for, as a man standing vpon *Callis* Sands may see men walking on *Douer* Clyffes, so easily may you discerne Heauen from the farthest part of hell, and behold the melodie and motions of the Angels and Spirits there resident, in such perfect manner, as if you were amongst them; which, how it worketh in the mindes and foules of them that haue no power to apprehend such felicitie, it is not for me to intimate, because it is preiudiciall to our Monarchie.

I would bee forrie (quoth I) to importune you in any matter of secrecie: yet this I desire, if it might bee done without offence, that you would

fatisfie me in full fort, and according to truth, what the Diuell is whom you serue? as also how he began, and how farre his power and authoritie extends?

Perfie, / beleeuē me, thou shriuest me very neere in this latter demaund, which concerneth vs more deeply than the former, and may worke vs more damage than thou art aware of: yet in hope thou wilt conceale what I tell thee, I wil lay open our whole estate plainly and simply vnto thee as it is: but first I will begin with the opinions of former times, & so hasten forward to that *manifeste verum* that thou seekest. Some men there be that, building too much vpon reason, perswade themselues that there are no Diuells at all, but that this word *Dæmon* is such another morall of mischief, as the Poets Dame Fortune is of mishap: for as vnder the fiction of this blinde Goddesse we ayme at the folly of Princes and great men in disposing of honors, that oftentimes preferre fooles and disgrace wise men, and alter their fauours in turning of an eye, as Fortune turns her wheele: so vnder the person of this olde *Gnathonicall* companion, called the Diuell, we shrowd all subtiltie, masking vnder the name of simplicitie, all painted holines devouring widowes houses, all gray-headed Foxes clad in sheepes garments; so that the Diuell (as they make it) is onely a pestilent humour in a man,

of pleasure, profit, or policie, that violently carries him away to vanitie, villanie, or monstrous hypocrisie: vnder vanitie I comprehend not onely all vaine Arts and studies whatsoeuer, but also dishonorable prodigality, vntemperate venerie, and that hatefull sinne of selfe-loue, which is so common among vs: vnder villany I comprehend murder, treason, theft, coufnage, cut-throat couetise, and such like: lastly, vnder hypocrisie, al Machiauilisme, puritanisme, & outward gloasing with a mans enemie, and protesting friendship to him I hate, and meane to harme, all vnder-hand cloaking of bad actions with Common-wealth pretences: and, finally, all Italionate conueyances, as to kill a man, and then mourne for him, *quasi vero* it was not by my consent, to be a slaue to him that hath iniur'd me, and kisse his feete for opportunities of reuenge, to be seuerie in punishing offenders, that none might haue the benefite of such meanes but myfelfe, to vse men for my purpose & then cast them off, to seeke his / destruction that knowes my secrets: and such as I haue imployed in any murther or stratagem, to fet them priuillie together by the eares, to stab each other mutually, for fear of bewraying me: or, if that faile, to hire them to humor one another in such courses as may bring them both to the gallowes. These, and a thousand more such sleights, hath hypocrisie learned by traauiling strange

Countries. I will not say she puts them in practise here in *England*, although there be as many false brethren & craftie knaves here amongst vs as in any place: witness the poore Miller of *Cambridge*, that, hauing no roome for his hen-loft but the Testor of his bed, and it was not possible for any hungrie Poultrers to come there, but they must stand vpon the one side of it, and so not steale them but with great hazard; had in one night notwithstanding (when hee and his wife were a snorting) all the whole progenie of their Pullerie taken away, and neither of them heard anie stirring: it is an odde trick, but what of that, we must not stand vpon it, for wee haue grauer matters in hand than the stealing of Hennes. Hypocrisie, I remember, was our Text, which was one of the chiefe morrall Diuels, our late Doctors affirme to be most busie in these dayes: and busie it is, in trueth, more than anye Bee that I knowe: now you talke of a Bee, Ile tell you a tale of a Battledore.

The Beare on a time, being chiefe Burgomaster of all the Beasts vnder the Lyon, gan thinke with himselfe how hee might surfet in pleasure, or best husband his Authoritie to enlardge his delight and contentment. With that hee beganne to pry and to smell through euery corner of the Forrest for praye, to haue a thousande imaginations with him-

felfe what daintie morfell he was mafter of, and yet had not tafted : whole Heards of fheepe had hee deuoured, and was not fatisfied ; fat Oxen, Heyfers, Swine, Calues, and young Kiddes, were his ordinarie vyands : he longed for horfe-flefh, and went prefently to a medowe, where a fat Cammell was grazing, whom, fearing to encounter with force, becaufe he was a huge beaft and well fhod, / he thought to betray vnder the colour of demaunding homage, hoping that, as he fhould ftoop to doo him truage, he might feaze vpon his throat, and ftifle him before he fhould be able to recouer himfelfe from his falfe embrace : but therin he was deceiued : for, comming vnto this ftately Beaft with this imperious meffage, in ftcad of doing homage vnto him, he lifted vp one of his hindmoft heeles, and ftroake him fuch a blowe on the forehead that hee ouerthrew him. Thereat not a little moou'd, and enrag'd, that he fhould be fo difhonored by his inferiour, as he thought, he confulted with the Ape how he might be reuēged. The Ape, abhorring him by nature, becaufe he ouer-lookt him fo Lordly, and was by fo many degrees greater than he was, aduifed him to digge a pit with his pawes right in the way where this big boand Gentleman fhould paffe, that fo ftumbling and falling in, he might lightly fkip on his backe, and bridle him, and then hee [could] come and feaze on

him at his pleasure. No sooner was this perswaded thã performed : for enuie, that is neuer idle, could not sleep in his wrath, or ouer-flip the least opportunitie, till he had seene the confusion of his enimie. Alas, goodly Creature, that thou mightest no longer liue. What auaieth thy gentlenes, thy prowesse, or the plentifull pasture wherein thou wert fed, since malice triumphs ouer al thou commandest? Well may the Mule rise vp in armes, and the Ass bray at the Authors of thy death : yet shall their furie be fatall to themselues, before it take hold on these Traitours. What needeth more words? the deuourer feedes on his captiue, and is gorged with blood. But as auarice and crueltie are euermore thirstie, so far'd it with this hungrie Ufurper : for hauing flesht his ambition with this treacherous conquest, he past along through a groue, where a Heard of Deare were a ranging ; whom, when he had stedfastly surveyed from the fattest to the leanest, hee singled out one of the fairest of the companie, with whom he meant to close up his stomacke instead of cheese : but because the Woodmen were euer stirring thereabout, and it was not possible for one of his coate to commit such outrage vndescried, and that, if he were espied, his life were in perill ; though not with the Lyon, whose eyes he coulde blinde as he list, yet with the lesser fort of the brutish Comminaltie, whom no flattrie

might pacifie. Therefore, he determined flylie and priuillie to poyson the streame where this iolly Forester wonted to drink; & as he determined, so he did: whereby it fell out, that when the Sunne was ascended to his height, & all the nimble Citizens of the Wood betooke them to their Laire, this youthfull Lord of the Lawnds, all faint and malcontent, (as prophecying his neere approaching mishap by his languishing) with a lazie, wallowing pace, strayed aside from the rest of his fellowship, and betooke him all carelessly to the corrupted fountaine that was prepared for his Funerall. Ah, woe is me, this poyson is pitiles. What need I say more, since you know it is death with whom it encounters. And yet cannot all this expence of life, set a period to insatiable Murther: but still it hath some anuile to worke vpon, and ouercafts all opposite prosperitie, that may any way shadow his glorie. Too long it were to reherse all the practises of this sauadge blood-hunter: how he assailed the Unicorne as he slept in his den, and tore the hart out of his breast ere he could awake: how he made the lesser beasts lie in wait one for the other, and the Crocodile to coape with the Basiliske, that when they had enterchaungeably weakned each other, hee might come and insult ouer them both as he list. But these were lesser matters, which daily vsé had worne out of mens mouthes, and

he himself had so customably practised, that often exercise had quite abrogated the opinion of sinne, & impudencie throughly cōfirmd an vndaunted defiance of vertue in his face. Yet new-fangled lust, that in time is wearie of welfare, & will bee as soone cloyed with too much ease and delicacie, as Pouertie with labour and scarcitie, at length brought him out of loue with this greedie, bestiall humour: and now he affected a milder varietie in his diet: he had bethought him what a pleafant thing it was to eate nothing but honie another while, and what great store of it there was in that Countrey.

Now / did he cast in his head, that if hee might bring the husbandmen of the soyle in opinion that they might buy honey cheaper than being at such charges in keeping of Bees, or that those bees which they kept were most of thē drones, & what should such idle drones doe with such stately Hyues, or lye sucking at such precious Honnicombes; that if they were tooke away from them, and distributed equally abroad, they would releue a great many of painfull labourers that had need of them, and would continually liue seruiceable at their commaund, if they might enioy such a benefite. Nay more, let them giue Waspes but onely the wax, and dispose of the honnie as they thinke good, and they shall humme and buzze a thousand times lower than

they, and haue the hiue fuller at the yeeres end (with yong ones, I meane) than the Bees are wont in ten yere.

To broach this deuice, the Foxe was adrest like a shepheards dogge, and promist to haue his Pattent feald, to bee the Kings Poulterer for euer, if hee could bring it to passe. Faith, quoth he, and Ile put it in a venter, let it hap how it will. With that he grew in league with an old Camelion, that could put on all shapes, and imitate any colour, as occasion serued, and him he adrest, sometime like an Ape to make sport, & then like a Crocodile to weepe, sometime like a Serpent to sting, and by and by like a Spaniel to fawne, that with these fundrie formes, (applyde to mens variable humors) he might perswade the world he ment as he spake, and only intended their good, when he thought nothing lesse. In this disguise, these two deceiuers went vp & downe, and did much harme vnder the habite of Simplicitee, making the poore filly Swaines beleue they were cunning Phiftions, and well seene in all Cures, that they could heale any maladie, though neuer so daungerous, & restore a man to life that had been dead two dayes, onely by breathing vpon him: aboue all things they perswaded them, that the honny that their Bees brought forth, was poysonous and corrupt, by reason that those floures and hearbs, out of which

it was gathered and exhaled, were subiect to the infection of euery Spi/der and venomous Canker, and not a loathsome Toade (how detestable foeuer) but repose himselfe vnder theyr shadow, and lay sucking at their rootes continually: whereas in other Countries, no noisome or poisonous creature might liue, by reason of the imputed goodnes of the Soyle, or carefull diligence of the Gardners aboue ours, as for example, *Scotland, Denmarke,* & some more pure parts of the 17 Prouinces. These perswasions made the good honest Husbandmen to pause, and mistrust their owne wits very much, in nourishing such dangerous Animals, but* yet, I know not how antiquitie and custome so ouer-rulde their feare, that none would resolue to abandon them on the sodaine, til they saw a further inconuenience: whereby my two cunning Philosophers were driuen to studie Galen anew, and seeke splenatiue simples, to purge their popular Patients of the opinion of their olde Traditions and Customes: which, how they wrought with the most part that had least wit, it were a world to tell. For now nothing was Canonically but what they spake, no man would conuerse with his wife but first askt their aduise, nor pare his nayles, nor cut his beard, without their prescription: so senceles, so wauering is the light vnconstaunt Multitude, that will daunce after euerie

* Interdum
vulgus rectum
videt, et vbi
peccat.

mans pype ; and fooner prefer a blinde harper that can squeake out a new horne-pipe, than *Alcinous* or *Appolloes* varietie, that imitates the eight straines of the *Doryan* melodie. I speak this to amplifie y^e nouell folly of the headlong vulgar, that making their eyes and eares vassailles to the legerdemaine of these iugling Mountebanks, are presently drawne to contemne Art and experience, in comparison of the ignorance of a number of audacious ideots. The Fox can tell a faire tale, and couers all his knauerie vnder conscience, and the Camelion can addresse himself like an Angell whensoever he is disposed to worke mischief by myracles : but yet in the end, their secret drifts are laide open, and *Linceus* eyes, that see through stone walles, haue made a passage into the close couerture of their hypocrisie.

For one daye, as these two Deuisers were plotting by / themselues how to driue all the Bees from their Honnycombes, by putting wormewood in their Hyues, and strewing Henbane and Rue in euery place where they resort : a Flye that past by, and heard all their talke, stomaking the Foxe of olde, for that he had murthred so many of his kindred with his flayle-driuing taile, went presently and buzd in *Linceus* eares, the whole purport of their malice : who awaking his hundred eyes at these vnexpected tidings gan pursue them whersoever

they went, & trace their intents as they proceeded into action, so that ere halfe their baytes were cast forth, they were apprehended and imprisoned, and all their whole counsaile detected. But long ere this, the Beare, impatient of delayes, and consum'd with an inward griefe in himselfe, that hee might not haue his will of a fat Hinde that out-ran him, he went into the woods all melancholie, and there dyed for pure anger: leauing the Foxe and the Camelion to the destinie of their desert, and mercie of their Judges. How they scape I knowe not, but some saye they were hangd, and so weele leaue them.

How lik'ft thou of my tale, friend *Persie*? Haue I not described a right earthly Diuell vnto thee, in the discourse of this bloodie minded Beare? or canst thou not attract the true image of Hypocrisie, vnder the description of the Foxe and the Camelion?

Yes, very well (quoth I); but I would gladly haue you returne to your first subiect, since you haue mooued doubts in my minde, which you haue not yet discuft.

Of the fundrie opinions of the Diuell thou meanest, and them that imagine him to haue no existence, of which fort are they that first inuented the Prouerbe, *Homo homini Dæmon*: meaning thereby, that that power which we call the Diuell,

and the miniftring Spirits belonging to his kingdome are tales and fables, and meere bugge-beares to fcarre boyes: and that there is no fuch effence at all, but onely it is a terme of large content, defcribing the rancor, grudge, & bad dealing of one man towards another: as, namely, when one friend talkes with another fubtilly, and feekes to dyue into / his commoditie, that hee may depriue him of it craftilie; when the fonne feeks the death of the father, that he may be infeoffed in his wealth: & the ftepdame goes about to make away her fonne-in-law, that her children may inherit: whē brothers fall at iarres for portions, & fhall, by open murder or priuy confpiracy, attempt the confufion of each other, only to ioyne houfe to houfe, and vnite two Liuelihoods in one: when the feruant fhall rob his Mafter, and men put in truft, ftart away from their oathes and vowes, they care not how.

In fuch cafes & many more, may one man be fayd to bee a diuell to another, & this is the fecond opinion. The third is that of *Plato*, who not onely affirmeth that there are diuels, but deuided them into three forts, euery one a degree of dignitie about the other; the firft are thofe, whofe bodies are cōpa&ct of ŷ pureft ayrie Element, combined with fuch transparant threeds, that neither they doo partake fo much fire as fhould make them

visible to fight, or haue any such affinitie with the earth, as they are able to be prest or toucht: & these he setteth in the highest incomprehensible degree of heauen. The second, he maketh these, whom *Apuleius* doth call reasonable Creatures, passiuie in minde and eternall in Time, being those *apostata* spirites that rebelled with *Belzebub*: whose bodies, before their fall, were bright and pure all like to the former: but, after their transgression, they were obscured in a thicke, fiery matter, and euer after assigned to darknes. The third, he attributes to those men that, by some diuine knowledge or vnderstanding, seeming to aspyre aboue mortalitie, are called *Dæmona*, (that is) *Gods*: for this word *Dæmon* contayneth eyther, and *Homer* in euery place doth vse it both for that omnipotent power that was before al things, and the euill spirite that leadeth men to error: so doth *Syrianus* testifie, that *Plato* was called *Dæmon*, because he disputed of deepe Common-wealth matters, greatly auailable to the benefite of his Countrey: and *Aristotle* because he wrote at large of al things subiect to mouing and sence. Then belike (quoth I) you make this word *Dæmon*, a capable name of Gods, of men, and of diuells, which is farre distant / from the scope of my demand: for I doo only inquire of the diuel, as this common appellation of the Diuel, signifieth a malignant spirit, enemie to man-

kinde, and a hater of God and all goodnes. Those are the second kinde, said he, vsually termed detracters, or accusers, that are in knowledge infinite, infomuch as, by the quicknes of their wits & agreeable mixtures of the Elements, they so comprehend those seminarie vertues to men vnknown, that those things which, in course of time or by growing degrees, Nature of itselfe can effect, they, by their art and skil in hastning the works of Nature, can contriue and compasse in a moment: as the Magitians of *Pharao*, who, whereas Nature, not without some interposition of time and ordinarie causes of conception, brings forth frogs, serpents, or any liuing thing els, they, without all such distance of space, or circumscription of season, euen in a thought, as soone as their King commanded, couered the land of *Ægipt* with this monstrous encrease. Of the originall of vs spirites, the Scripture most amply maketh mention, namely, that *Lucifer*, (before his fall) an Arch-angel, was a cleere body, compact of the purest and brightest of the ayre, but after his fall hee was vayed with a groser substance, and tooke a new forme of darke and thicke ayre, which he still reteyneth. Neither did he onely fall, when hee stroue with *Michael*, but drewe a number of Angels to his faction; who ioynt partakers of his proud reuolt, were likewise partakers of his punishment, and all thrust

out of heauen together by one iudgement: who euer since doo nothing but wander about the Earth, and tempt and enforce frayle men to enterprife all wickednes that may be, and commit most horrible and abominable things against God. Meruaile not that I discouer so much of our estate vnto thee: for the Scripture hath more than I mention, as *S. Peter*, where he sayth that *God spared not his Angels that sinned*: and in an other place; wher he saith that *they are bound with the chains of darknes, and throwne headlong into hell*: which is not meant of any locall place in the earth, or vnder the waters; for, as *Austin* affirmeth, wee doo inhabite the Region vnder the Moone, / and haue the thicke aire assigned vs as a prifon, from whence we may with small labour cast our nets where wee list: yet are we not so at our disp[*o*]fition, but that we are still commanded by *Lucifer*, (although we are in number infinite) who retaining that pride wherewith he arrogantly affected the Maiestie of God, hath still his ministring Angels about him, whom he employes in feuerall charges, to seduce & deceiue as him seemeth best: as those spirites which the Latins call *Iouios* and *Antemeridianos*, to speake out of Oracles, and make the people worship them as Gods, when they are nothing but deluding Diuels, that couet to haue a false Deitie ascribed vnto them, & draw men vnto their loue by won-

ders & prodigies, that els would hate them deadly, if they knewe their maleuolence and enuy. Such a monarchizing spirit it was that sayd vnto Christ, *If thou wilt fall downe, and worship me, I will giue thee all the Kingdomes of the earth:* and such a spirit it was that possesst the *Libian Sapho*, and the Emperour *Dioclesian*, who thought it the blessedst thing that might be to be called God. For the one being weary of humane honor, & inspired with a supernaturall folly, taught little birds, that were capable of speech, to pronounce distinctly, *Magnus Deus Sapho*; that is to say, *A great god is Sapho*: which words, when they had learned readily to carroll, and were perfect in their note, he let them flie at randome, that so dispersing themselues euery where, they might induce the people to account of him as a God. The other was so arrogant, that he made his subiects fall prostrate on their faces, and lifting vp their hands to him as to heauen, adore him as omnipotent.

The second kind of Diuels, which he most imployeth, are those northerne *Marcij*, called the spirits of reuenge, & the authors of massacres, & seedsmen of mischief: for they haue commission to incense men to rapines, sacriledge, theft, murther wrath, furie, and all manner of cruelties, & they commaund certaine of the Southern spirits (as

flaues) to wayt vpon them, as also great *Arioch*, that is tearmed the spirite of reuenge.

These / know how to diffociate the loue of brethren, and to break wedlock bands with such violence, that they may not be vnited, & are predominant in many other domestically mutinies: of whom, if you list to heare more, read the 39 of *Ecclesiasticus*. The prophet *Esay* maketh mention of another Spirit, sent by God to the *Egyptians*, to make them stray and wander out of the way, that is to say, the Spirite of lying, which they call *Bolychym*. The spirits that entice men to gluttonie & lust, are certaine watry spirits of the West, and certaine Southerne spirits as *Nefrach* and *Kelen*, which for the most part profecute vnlawfull loues, and cherish all vnnatural desires: they wander through lakes, fish-ponds, and fennes, & ouerwhelme ships, cast boates vpon ankers, and drowne men that are swimming: therefore are they counted the most pestilent, troublesome, and guilefull spirits that are: for by the helpe of *Alynach*, a Spirit of the West, they will raise stormes, cause earthquakes, whirlwindes, rayne, haile or snow in the cleereft day that is: and if euer they appeare to any man, they come in womens apparell. The spirits of the aire will mixe themselues with thunder & lightning, and so infect the Clyme where they raise any tempest, that sodainly great mortalitie shal ensue to

the inhabitants from the infectious vapors which arise from their motions: of such *S. Iohn* maketh mention in the ninth of the Apocalips; their patrone is *Mereris*, who beareth chief rule about the middle time of the day.

The spirits of the fire haue their mansions vnder the regions of the Moone, that whatsoeuer is committed to their charge they may there execute, as in their proper cōfistorie, from whence they cannot start. The spirits of the Earth keepe, for the most part, in Forrests and woods, and doo hunters much noyance, and sometime in the broad fields, where they lead trauellers out of y^e right way, or fright men with deformed apparitions, or make them run mad through exceffiue melancholy, like *Aiæx Telamonius*, & so proue hurtfull to themselues, and dangerous to others: of this number the chiefe are *Samaab* and *Achymael*, spirits of the East, that haue no power to doo any great harme, by reason / of the vnconstancie of their affections. The vnder-earth spirits, are such as lurk in dens & little cauernes of the earth, and hollow creuises of mountaines, that they may dyue into the bowels of the earth at their pleasures: these dig metals and watch treasures, which they continually transport from place to place, that none should haue vse of them: they raise windes that vomit flames, & shake the foundation of buildings, they daunce in

rounds in pleafant Launds, and greene meddowes, with noyfes of mufick and minftralfie, & vanifh away when any comes neere them: they will take vpon them any fimilitude but of a woman, and terrifie men in the likenes of dead mens ghofts in the night time: and of this qualitie & condition the Necromancers hold *Gaziel*, *Fegor*, and *Anarazel*, Southerne fpirits, to be. Befides, there are yet remaining certaine lying fpirits, who (although all bee giuen to lie by nature) yet are they more prone to that vice than the reft, being named *Pythonifts*, of whom *Apollo* comes to be called *Pythæus*: they haue a prince afwel as other fpirits, of whom mention is made in the 3 booke of Kings, when he faith he will be a lying fpirit in the mouth of all *Ahabs* prophets: from which thofe fpirites of iniquitie doo little differ, which are called the veffels of wrath, that affift *Belial* (whom they interpret a fpirite without yoake or controuler) in all damnable deuifes and inuentions. *Plato* reports them to bee fuch as firft deuifed Cardes and dice, and I am in the mind, that the Monke was of the fame order, that found out the vfe of Gunpouder, and the engines of warre thereto belonging. Thofe that write of thefe matters call this *Belial Chodar* of the Eaft, that hath all witches and coniurers fpirits vnder his iurifdiction, & giues them leaue to helpe Juglers in their tricks,

& *Simon Magus* to doo miracles; allwaies prouided they bring a foule home to their Master for his hyre.

Yet are not these all, for there are spirits called spies & tale-carriers, obedient to *Ascaroth*, whom the Greekes call *Daimona*, and *S. Iohn*, *The accuser of the brethren*: also tempters, who for their interrupting vs in al our good actions are cald our euill Angels. Aboue all things they hate the light, and / reioyce in darknes, disquieting men malicioufly in the night, & sometmes hurt them by pinching them, or blasting them as they sleepe: but they are not so much to be dreaded as other spirits, because if a man speak to them, they flee away, and will not abide. Such a spirit *Plinius Secundus* telleth of, that vsed to haunt a goodly house in *Athens* that *Athenodorus* hired; and such another *Suetonius* describeth to haue long houered in *Lamianus* garden, where *Caligula* lay buried, who for because he was onely couered with a fewe clods, and vnreuerently throwne amongst the weedes, hee merueilously disturbed the owners of the garden, & would not let them rest in their beds, till by his Sisters, returned from banishment, he was taken vp, & entoombed solemnly. *Pausanias* avoucheth (amongst other experiments) that a certaine spirit called *Zazilus* doth feed vpon dead mens corfes, that are not deeply enterred as they ought:

which to confirme, there is a wonderful accident set downe in the Danish historie of *Asuitus* and *Asmundus*, who, being two famous friends (well knownen in those parts) vowd one to another, that which of thē two outliued the other, should be buried aliue with his friend that first died. In short space *Asuitus* fell sicke and yeelded to nature: *Asmundus*, compelled by the oath of his friendship, took none but his horse and his dog with him, and transported the dead bodie into a vast caue vnder the earth, & ther determined (hauing victualed himselfe for a long time) to finish his dayes in darknes, and neuer depart from him that he loued so dearly.

Thus shut vp, and enclosed in the bowels of the earth, it hapned *Eritus*, King of *Sweneland*, to passe that way with his armie, not full two moneths after: who coming to the toombe of *Asuitus*, and suspecting it a place where treasure was hidden, caused his Pioneers with their spades and mattockes to dig it vp: whereupon was discouered the loathsome body of *Asmundus*, al to besmeared with dead mens filth, & his visage most vgly and ffearfull; which imbrued with congeald blood, and eaten and torne like a raw vlcer, made him so gastly to behold, that all the lookers on were affrighted. He, seeing himselfe / restored to light, and so many amazed men stand about him, re-

folued their vncertaine perplexitie in theſe tearmes. Why ſtand you aſtoniſht at my vnufual deformities? when no liuing man conuerſeth with the dead but is thus diſfigured. But other cauſes haue effected this alteration in me: for I know not what audacious ſpirit, ſent by *Gorgon* from the deep, hath not onely moſt rauenuſly deuoured my horſe and my dog, but alſo hath layd his hungry pawes vpon mee, and, tearing downe my cheekes as you ſee, hath likewiſe rent away one of mine eares. Hence it is that my mangled ſhape ſeemes ſo monſtrous, and my humane image obſcured with gore in this wiſe. Yet ſcaped not this fell Harpie from mee vnreuengd: for, as he aſſayld me, I raught his head from his ſhoulders, and ſheathd my ſword in his body. Haue ſpirites their viſible bodies, ſaid I, that may be toucht, wounded, or pierſt? Beleeue me, I neuer heard that in my life before this. Why, quoth he, although in their proper eſſence they are creatures incorporal, yet can they take vpon thē the induments of any liuing body whatſoeuer, and transforme themſelues into all kinde of ſhapes, whereby they may more eaſily deceiue our ſhallow wits and fences. So teſtifies *Bafilus*, that they can put on a materiall forme when they liſt. *Socrates* affirmeth that his *Dæmon* did oftentimes talke with him, & that he ſaw & felt him many times. But *Marcus Cherone-*

sius (a wonderfull discoverer of Diuels) writeth, that those bodies which they assume are distinguished by no difference of sex, because they are simple, and the discernance of sex belongs to bodies compound: yet are they flexible, motiue, and apt for any configuration; but not all of them alike; for the spirits of the Fire and Aire haue this power about the rest. The spirits of the water haue flow bodies resembling birds and women, of which kinde the *Naiades* & *Nereides* are much celebrated amongst Poets. Neuertheles, howeuer they are restrained to their seueral similitudes, it is certaine that all of them desire no forme or figure so much, as the likenesse of a man, & doo thinke themselves in heauen when they are insooft in that hue: wherefore I know no / other reason but this, that man is the neereft representatiō to God, in so much as the Scripture saith, *He made man after his own likenesse and image*: and they affecting, by reason of their pride, to be as like God as they may, contend most seriously to shroud themselves vnder that habit.

But, I pray, tell mee this, whether are there (as *Porphirius* holdeth) good spirits aswell as euill? Nay, certainly (quoth he) we are all euill, let *Porphirius*, *Proclus*, *Apuleius*, or the *Platonists* dispute to the contrary as long as they will: which I will confirme to thy capacity by the names that are euerywhere giuen vs in the Scripture: for the

diuell, which is the *Summum genus* to vs all, is called *Diabolus quasi deorsum ruens*, that is to say, falling downward, as hee that aspyring too high, was thrown from the top of felicitie to the lowest pit of despayre: and fathan, that is to say, an Aduersary, who, for the corruption of his malice, opposeth himselfe euer against God, who is the chiefeft good. In *Iob Behemoth* and *Leuiathan*, and in the 9. of the *Apocalips*, *Apolyon*, that is to say, a Subuerter: because the foundation of those vertues, which our high Maker hath planted in our foules, hee vndermineth and fubuerteth. A Serpent for his poyfoning, a Lyon for his deuouring: a Furnace, for that by his malice the Elect are tryed, who are vessels of wrath and saluation. In *Efay* a Syren, a Lamia, a Scrich-oule, an Estridge. In the Pfalmes, an Adder, a Basiliske, a Dragon. And lastly, in the Gospel, Mammon, Prince of this world, and the Gouvernour of darknes: so that, by the whole courfe of condemning names that are giuen vs, and no one instance of any fauourable tittle bestowed vpon vs, I positiuely fet downe that all spirits are euill. Now, whereas the Diuines attribute vnto vs these good and euill spirits, the good to guide vs from euil, and the euil to draw vs from goodnesse, they are not called spirits, but Angells, of which fort was *Raphaell*, the good Angel of *Tobias*, who exilde the euill spirit *Asmo-*

dias into the defart of *Ægipt*, that he might be the more secure from his temptation. Since wee haue entred thus far into the diuels commonwealth, I beseech you certifie me thus much, / whether haue they power to hurt granted them from god or from themselues: can they hurt as much as they wil? Not so, quoth hee, for although that diuells be most mightie spirites, yet can they not hurt but permissiuelie, or by some speciall dispensation: as when a man is faln into the state of an outlaw, the Lawe dispenseth with them that kills him, & the Prince excludes him from the protection of a subiect, so, when a man is a relaps from God and his Lawes, God withdrawes his prouidence from watching ouer him, & authoriseth the deuil, as his instrument, to assault him and torment him, so that whatfoeuer he dooth, is *Limitata potestate*, as one saith: infomuch as a haire cannot fall from our heads, without the will of our heauenlie Father.

The diuell could not deceiue *Achabs* prophets till he was licensed by God, nor exercise his tyranie ouer *Iob*, til he had giuen him commiffion, nor enter into the heard of swine, til Christ bad them goe. Therefore, need you not feare the diuell any whit, as long as you are in the fauour of God, who raineth him so straight, that except he let him loose he can doo nothing. This manlike proportion,

which I now retaine, is but a thinge of suffrance, granted vnto me to plague such men as hunt after strife, & are delighted with variance. It may be so very well, but whether haue you that skil to foretell thinges to come, that is ascribed vnto you? We haue (quoth he) fometimes: not that we are priuie to the eternall counsel of god, but for that by the sense of our ayrie bodies, we haue a more refined faculty of foreseeing, than men possibly can haue, that are chained to such heauie earthlie moulder; or els for that by the incomparable pernicitie of those ayrie bodies, we not onely outstrip the swiftnes of men, beasts and birds, wherby we may be able to attain to the knowledge of things sooner, than those that by the dulnes of their earthlie sense com a great waie behind vs. Herunto may we adioine our long experience in the course of things from the beginning of the world, which men want, and, therefore, cannot haue that deepe coniecture that we haue. Nor is our knowledge any more than coniecture: for prescience only belongeth to God, & that gesse / that we haue proceedeth from the compared disposition of heauenly and erthlie bodies, by whose long obserued temperature, we doo diuine manie times, as it happens: & therefore doo we take vpon vs to prophecy, that we may purchase estimation to our names, & bringe men in admiration with that we

do, and so be counted for Gods. The myracles wee work are partly contriued by illusion, and partly assisted by that supernatural skil we haue in the experience of nature aboue al other creatures. But against these illusions of your subtletie & vain terrors you inflict, what is our chiefe refuge? I shalbe accounted a foolish Diuel anon, if I bewray the secrets of our kingdome, as I haue begun: yet speak I no more than learned Clarks haue written, and asmuch as they haue set downe will I shew thee.

Origin, in his treatise against *Celsus*, faith, there is nothing better for him that is vexed with spirits, then the naming of *Iesu* the true God, for he auoucheth, he hath seen diuers driuen out of mens bodies by that meanes. *Athanasus* in his booke *De varijs questionibus* faith, The presentest remedie against the inuasion of euill spirits, is the beginning of the 67. Psalme, *Exurgat Deus, & dissipentur inimici ejus.* *Cyprian* counsels men to adiure spirits onely by the name of the true God. Some hold that fire is a preferuatiue for this purpose, because when any spirit appeareth, the lights by little and little goe out, as it were of their owne accord, and the tapers are by degrees extinguisht. Others by inuocating vpon God, by the name of *Vehiculum ignis superioris*, and often rehearsing the Articles of our faith. A third sort are perswaded that the

brandishing of swordes is good for this purpose, because *Homer* faineth, that *Vlisses*, sacrificing to his mother, wafted his sword in the aire to chase the spirits from the bloude of the sacrifice. And *Sybylla*, conducting *Aeneas* to hell, begins hir charmes in this fort.

Procul, O procul, este prophani :
Tuque juvande viam, vaginaque eripe ferrum.

Philostratus reporteth, that he and his companions meeting that diuel which artists entitle *Apolonius*, as they came one night from banquetting, with such termes as he is curst in / holy writ, they made him run awaie howling. Manie in this case extoll perfume of *Calamentum pæonia*, *Menta palma Christi*, and *Appius*. A number prefer the carying of red Corrall about them, or of *Arthemisia hypericon*, *Ruta verbena*: & to this effect manie doo vse the jynghing of keyes, the sound of the harp, and the clashing of armor. Some of old time put great superstition in characters, curiously engraued in their *Pentagonon*, but they are all vaine, & will do no good, if they be otherwise vsed than as signes of couenaunt betweene the diuell and them. Nor doo I affirme all the rest to be vnfallible prescriptions, though sometime they haue their vse: but that the onelie assured waie to resist their attempts is prayer and faith, gainst which all the

diuells in hell cannot preuaile. Inough, gentle spirit, I wil importune thee no farther, but commit this Supplication to thy care : which, if thou deliuer accordinglie, thou shalt at thy returne haue mor[e] of my custome : for by that time I wil haue finished certain letters to diuers Orators & Poets, disperced in your dominions. That as occasion shal serue, but nowe I must take leaue of you, for it is Terme time, and I haue some busines. A Gentleman (a frend of mine, that I neuer saw before) staies for me, and is like to be vndone if I come not in to beare witnes on his side : wherefore *Bazilez manus* till our next meeting.

Gentle Reader, *tandem aliquando* I am at leasure to talke to thee. I dar say thou hast cald me a hundred times dolt for this senseles discourse : it is no matter, thou dost but as I haue done by a number in my dayes. For who can abide a scuruie pedling Poet to pluck a man by the sleeue at euerie third step in *Paules* Churchyard, and when hee comes in to seruey his wares, theres nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt vp in wast paper. It were verie good the dogwhipper in *Paules* would haue a care of this in his vnsauerie visitation euerie Saturday : for it is dangerous for such of the *Queenes* liedge people, as shall take a viewe of them fasting.

Looke / to it, you Bookfellers & Stationers, and

let not your shops be infected with anie such goose gyblets, or stinking garbidge as the Jygs of newsmongers, and especiallie such of you as frequent Westminster hall, let them be circumspect what dunghill papers they bring thither: for one bad pamphlet is inough to raise a dampe that may poyson a whole Terme, or at the least a number, of poore Clyents, that haue no money to preuent il aire by breaking their fasts ere they come thether. Not a base Inck-dropper, or scuruy plodder at *Nouerint*, but nailes his asses eares on euerie poast, & comes off with long *Circumquaque* to the Gentleman Readers, yea, the most excerementary dishlickers of lerning are grown so valiant in impudence, that now they set vp their faces (like Turks) of gray paper, to be spet at for siluer games in Finburie fields. Whilst I am thus talking, me thinkes I heare one say, What a fop is this, he entitles his Booke a *Supplication to the Diuell*, & doth nothing but raile on ideots, and tells a storie of the nature of spirits. Haue patience, good sir, and weele come to you by and by. Is it my Title you finde fault with? Why, haue you not secne a Towne furnamed by the principall house in the Towne, or a Noble man deriue his Baronie from a little village where he hath least land? So fareth it by me in christening of my booke. But some will obiect, wheretoo tends this discouerie of diuels,

or how is it induced? Forsooth, if thou wilt needs know my reason, this it is. I bring *Pierce Penilesse* to question with the diuel, as a yong nouice would talke with a great trauailer, who, carying an Englishmans appetite to enquire of news, will be fure to make what vse of him he may, and not leaue any thing vnaskt, that he can resolue him of. If then the diuell be tedious in discourfing, impute it to *Pierce Penilesse* that was importunate in demanding; or if I haue not made him so secret or subtill in his art, as diuels are wont, let that of *Lactantius* be mine excuse, *lib 2, cap 16 de Origenis errore*, when he saith, the diuels haue no power to lie to a iust man, and if they adiure them by the maiesty of the high God, they will not onely confesse themselves to be Diuels, but also tel their / names as they are. *Deus bone*, what a vaine am I fallen into? what, an Epistle to the Readers in the end of thy book? Out vppon thee for an arrent blocke, where learndst thou that wit? O sir, hold your peace: a fellow neuer comes to his answere before the offence be committed. Wherefore, if I in the beginning of my Book should haue come off with a long Apologie to excuse my selfe, it were all one, as if a theefe, going to steale a horse, should deuise by the waie as he went, what to spake when he came at the gallows. Here is a crosse waie, and I thinke it good heere to part. Farwell, fare-

well, good Parenthesis, and commend me to Ladie Vanitie, thy mistres.

Now, *Pierce peniles*, if for a parting blow thou hast ere a tricke in thy budget more then ordinarie, bee not daintie of it, for a good patron will pay for all. I, where is he? *Promissis quilibet diues esse potest*. But cap and thanks is all our Courtiers payment: wherefore, I would counsell my frends to be more confiderate in their Dedications, and not cast away so many months labour vppon a clowne that knowes not how to vse a Scholer: for what reason haue I to bestow any of my wit vpon him, that wil bestow none of his wealth vpon me. Alas, it is an easie matter for a goodlie tall fellow, that shineth in his filkes, to come and out face a poore simple Pedant in a thred bare cloak, and tell him his Booke is prety, but at this time he is not prouided for him: marrie, about two or three daies hence if he come that waie, his Page shal say he is not within, or els he is so busie with my L. How-call-ye him, and my L. What-call-ye him, that he may not be spoken withall. These are the common courses of the world, which euery man priuatly murmurs at, but none dares openlie vpbraid, because all Artifts for the most are base minded and like the *Indians*, that haue store of gold & precious stones at commãd, yet are ignorant of their value, and therefore let the Spaniards, the Englishmen

and euery one lode their ships with them without molestation. So they, enioyeing and possessing the puritie of knowledge, (a treasure farre richer than the Indian Mynes) let euerie proud *Thrafo* be partaker of their perfections, repaieing them no profit: and / gyld himselfe with the titles they giue him, when he wil scarce returne them a good word for their labor: giue an Ape but a nut, and he wil looke your head for it; or a Dog a bone, and hele wag his taylor: but giue me one of my young Masters a booke, and he will put of his hat and blush, and so go his waie.

Yes, now I remember me, I lie; for I know him that had thanks for three yeares worke, and a Gentleman that bestowed much cost in refining of musicke, & had scarce Fidlers wages for his labor. We want an *Aretine* here among vs, that might strip these golden asses out of their gay trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with railing, leaue them on the dunghil for carion. But I will write to his ghost by my carrier, & I hope hele repare his whip, and vse it against our English Peacockes, that painting themselues with Church spoiles, like mightie mens sepulchers, haue nothing but Atheisme, schisme, hypocrisie, and vainglorie, like rotten bones lie lurking within them. O how my soule abhors these buckram giants, that hauing an outward face of honor set vpon them by flat-

terers & parasites, haue their inward thoughts stuf with straw and fethers, if they were narrowlie sifted.

Farre be it, bright starres of Nobilitie, and gliftring Attendaunts on the true *Diana*, that this my speach should be anie way iniurious to your glorious magnificence: for in you liue those sparkes of *Augustus* liberalitie, that neuer sent any away emptie: and Science seauenfold throne, welnigh ruined by ryot and auarice, is mightely supported by your plentiful larges, which makes Poets to sing such goodlie Himnes of your praise, as no enuious posteritie may forget. But from generall fame, let me digres to my priuate experience, and with a tongue vnworthie to name a name of such worthiness, affectionately emblazon to the eyes that wonder, the matchles Image of Honor, & magnificent rewarder of vertue, *Ioues eagle-borne Ganimed*, thrice noble *Amintas*. In whose high spirit, such a Deitie of wisdome appeareth, that if *Homer* were to write his *Odyfsea* new, (where, vnder the person of *Vlyfses*, hee describeth a singular man of perfection, in whome all ornaments both of peace / and war are assembled in the height of their excelence) he need no other instance to augment his conceipt, than the rare carriage of his honorable minde. Many writers and good wits, are giuen to commend their patrons and Benefactors, some for

proweſſe, ſome for policie, others for the glorie of their Anceſtrie and exceeding bountie and liberalitie: but if my vnable pen ſhould euer enterpriſe ſuch a continuate taſke of praife, I woulde embowell a number of thoſe windpuſt bladders, and diſfurniſh their bald pates of the perriwigs Poets haue lent them, that ſo I might reſtore glorie to his right inheritance, and theſe ſtoln Titles to their true owners: which, if it would ſo fall out, (as time maie worke all things) the aſpiring nettles, with their ſhadie topes, ſhal no longer ouer-dreep the beſt hearbs, or keep them from the ſmiling aſpect of the Sunn, that liue & thriue by comfortable beames. . None but Deſert ſhould fit in Fames grace, none but *Hector* be remembred in the chronicles of Proweſſe, none but thou, moſt courteous *Amyntas*, be the ſeconde muſicall argument of the knight of the Red-croſſe.

Oh decus atque ævi gloria ſumma tui.

And heere (heauenly *Spencer*) I am moſt highlie to accuſe thee of forgetfulnes, that in that honourable Catalogue of our Engliſh *heroes*, which inſueth the concluſion of thy famous Fairie Queene, thou wouldeſt let ſo ſpeciall a Piller of Nobilitie paſſe vnſaluted. The verie thought of his farre deriued diſcent, and extraordinarie parts, wherewith hee aſtoineth the world, and drawes all hearts to his

loue, woulde haue inspired thy forewearièd Muse with new furie to proceede to the next triumphs of thy stâtelie Goddesse : but as I, in fauor of so rare a scholler, suppose with this counsaile he refrained his mention in this first part, that hee might with full faile proceede to his due commendations in the second. Of this occasion long since I happened to frame a Sonnet, which, being wholie intended to the reuerence of this renoumed Lord (to whom I owe all the vtmoste powers of my loue and dutie) I meant heere for variety of stile to insert.

Peru / sing yesternight, with idle eyes,
 The Fairy Singers stately tuned verse :
 And viewing after ~~Chap-mens~~ wonted guise,
 What strange contents the title did rehearse.
 I streight leapt ouer to the latter end,
 Where like the queint Comædians of our time
 That when their Play is doone do fall to ryme,
 I found short lines, to fundry Nobles pend.
 Whom he as speciall Mirrours singled fourth,
 To be the Patrons of his Poetry ;
 I read them all, and reuerenc't their worth,
 Yet wondred he left out thy memory.

But therefore geft I he suppress't thy name,
 Because few words might not cõprise thy fame.

Bear with me gentle Poet, though I conceiue
 not aright of thy purpose, or be too inquisitiue into

the intent of thy obliuion: for, how euer my coniecture may misse the cushion, yet shall my speeche fauour of friendship, though it be not alied to iudgement.

Tantum hoc molior, in this short digression, to acquaint our countrymen, that liue out of the Eccho of the Courte, with a common knowledge of his inualuable vertues, and shew my selfe thankfull (in some part) for benefits receiued: which since words may not counteruaile, that are the vsual lip-labour of euerie idle discourser, I conclude with that of *Ouid*:

*Accipe per longos tibi qui deseruiat annos,
Accipe qui pura novit amare fide.*

And if my zeale and dutie (though all to meane to please) may by any industry, be reformed to your gracious liking, I submit the simplicitie of my endeouours to your seruice, which is all my performance may profer, or my ability performe.

*Præbeat Alcinoi poma benignus ager,
Officium pauper numeret studiumque fidemque.*

And so I breake off this endlesse argument of speeche abruptlie.

APPENDIX NOTE.

Agreeably to promise in Note prefixed to 'Pierce Penileffe' (page 2), I place here the more noticeable 'faults' of the Jhones edition, as it is represented in the late Mr. J. Payne Collier's reproduction for the 'Shakespeare Society' (1842). It would have been easy to have multiplied these 'faults'—against which Nashe himself wrote vehemently—but those recorded may be accepted as at once fairly representative and showing the advantage of taking for text the Author's own edition of 1592.

- Page 9, line 20, 'milder' misprinted 'milde.'
 ,, 11, ,, 20, 'whipt out' misprinted 'whipt.'
 ,, 19, ,, 26, 'thinke you could' (dropped).
 ,, 26, ,, 26, 'Earle' misprinted 'carle.'
 ,, 27, ,, 11, 'Lady Swin-fnout' misprinted 'Ladie Manibetter.'
 ,, 28, ,, 26, 'a scornfull melancholy . . . courfe & . . .' misprinted
 'melancholike courfe in his gate and countenance.'
 ,, 29, ,, 17, 'vnthriftes' misprinted 'outhriffs.'
 ,, 34, ,, 3, 'cafe' misprinted 'eafe.'
 ,, 34, ,, 7, 'finers' misprinted 'finders.'
 ,, 35, ,, 2, 'a paire of shoos and a Cannas-dublet' misprinted
 'a fcholler bread and cheefe.'
 ,, 35, ,, 5, 'obiect' misprinted 'abiect' [but query?].
 ,, 35, ,, 14, 'Raynard' misprinted 'Raynold.'
 ,, 38, ,, 15, 'then a stab' misprinted 'then the stab.'
 ,, 39, ,, 17, 'thrumd' misprinted 'thrubm.'
 ,, 39, ,, 22, 'stuft' misprinted 'puft.'
 ,, 45, ,, 4, '*Troynouant*' misprinted '*Troynonant*.'
 ,, 45, ,, 12, 'furious' misprinted 'furies.'
 ,, 45, ,, 16, 'furde' misprinted 'furre.'

- Page 46, line 27, 'guegawes' misprinted 'jymiams' (and a nonsensical note on it).
- „ 50, last line, 'euery' misprinted 'anie.'
- „ 57, line 1, 'loft his mafter' misprinted 'runnes after.'
- „ 57, „ 5, 'vaine' misprinted 'traine.'
- „ 57, „ 7, 'thofe' misprinted 'them.'
- „ 73, „ 8, 'eater' misprinted 'cater.'
- „ 78, „ 3, 'from Gentlemen' (dropped).
- „ 83, „ 21, 'Proui[de]nce' misprinted 'Prouince' (in both).
- „ 87, „ 11, 'yt' (dropped).
- „ 88, „ 7, 'howfoener' misprinted 'howeuer.'
- „ 89, „ 15, 'immortalitie' misprinted 'immoralitie.'
- „ 92, „ 17, 'Players' misprinted 'playes.'
- „ 92, „ 23, 'euer' misprinted 'euen.'
- „ 101, „ 11, 'Pullerie' misprinted 'pulteric.'
- „ 105, „ 3, 'impudencie' misprinted 'impudence.'
- „ 118, „ 21, 'vnreuerently' misprinted 'vnreuently.'
- „ 125, „ 5, 'illufions' misprinted 'allufions.'
- „ 128, „ 10, 'Inck-dropper' misprinted 'Jack-dropper.'
- „ 128, „ 11, 'nailes' misprinted 'vailles.'
- „ 128, „ 13, 'difh-lickers' misprinted 'diflikers.'
- „ 129, „ 14, 'adiure' misprinted 'abjure.'
- „ 129, „ 21, 'fellon' misprinted 'fellow.'
- „ 130, „ 25, 'fhineth' misprinted 'fhines.'
- „ 130, „ 25, 'becaufe all artifts for the moft part' misprinted
'becaufe the moft artifts.'
- „ 131, „ 26, 'he' (dropped).
- „ 132, „ 16, 'that' misprinted 'of.'

On the other hand, it is due to the Jhones edition to acknowledge several correct readings in single words as against incorrect in our '92 text, *e.g.* 'fhape' for 'fhame' (p. 19, l. 24), 'this' for 'thus' (p. 30, l. 17), 'yeomen' for 'yeoman' (p. 45, l. 18), 'iuce' for 'iuflice' (p. 60, l. 2).

A. B. G.



VII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

I. A WONDERFULL STRANGE AND MIRACULOUS
ASTROLOGICALL PROGNOSTICATION,
ETC.

1591-2.



NOTE.

For the 'Wonderfull Strange and Miraculous Aftrological Prognostication' I am indebted to the Bodleian. See Memorial-Introduction—Biographical, in Vol. I., and 'Critical' in Vol. IV.—on it, and other related publications.—A. B. G.

A Wonderfull

strange and miraculous, Astro-
logical Prognostication for
this yeer of our Lord God.

1591.

Discouering such wonders to
happen this yeere, as neuer chaunced
since Noes floud.

Wherein if there be found one lye,
the Author will loofe his credit
for euer.

By Adam Fouleweather, Student
in Affe-tronomy.



Imprinted at London by *Thomas*
Scarlet.
(1591.)



¶ To the Readers health.

Sitting Gentlemen vpon Douer cliffes, to quaint my selfe with the art of Nauigation, and knowe the course of the Tides, as the Danske Crowes gather on the Sandes against a storme: so there appeared on the downs such a flock of knaues, that by Astrological coniectures I began to gather, that this yeere would proue intemperate by an extreme heat in Sōmer, insomuch that the stons in Cheap side should be so hot, that diuers persons should feare to goe from Poules to the Counter in the Poultrye: whereupon I betook me to my Ephimerides, and erecting a figure, haue found such strange accidents to fall out this yeere, Mercury being Lord and predominate in the house of Fortune, that many fooles shall haue full cofers, and wise men walke vp and downe with empty purses: that if Iupiter were not ioyned with him in a fauourable aspect, the Butchers / of East-cheape should doo little or nothing all Lent but make prickes: seeing

therefore the wonders that are like to fall out this present yeere, I haue for the benefit of my Countrymen taken in hand to make this Prognostication, discourfing breefelye of the Eclipses both of Sunne and Moone, with their dangerous effectes like to followe, which if God preuent not: many poore men are like to fast on Sondaies for want of food, and fuch as haue no shooes to goe barefoot, if certaine deuout Coblers proue not the more curteous: but yet Astrologie is not fo certaine, but it may fayle: and therefore diuers Hosteffes shall chaulke more this yeere then their

Guefts wil wipe out: So that I conclude,
 whatfoeuer is faide by art. *Sapiens*
dominabitur astris.

Your freend and Student in Affe-trologie.

Adam Fouleweather./



☾ Of the Eclipses
that shall happen this present
*yeere, to the great and fear-
full terrifying of the
beholders.*



M*F we may credit* the authentick censures of Albumazan and Ptolomey, about the motions of celestial bodies, whose influence dooth exitat and procure continuall mutability in the lower region: we shall finde y^e the Moon this yeere shall be eclipsed, which shall happen in one of y^e 12. moneths, & some of the foure / quarters of the yeere, whose pointes as they shall be totallye darkened, so the effectes shall be wondrous and strange. For Cancer being the sole house of the Moone, dooth presage that this yeere fruits shall be greatly eaten with Caterpillers: as Brokers, Farmers, and Flatterers,

which feeding on the sweate of other mens browes, shall greatlye hinder the beautye of the spring, and disparage the growth of all hottest hearbes, vnlesse some northerly winde of Gods vengāce cleere the trees of such Catterpillers, with a hotte plague and the pestilence: but Cancer being a watrie signe and cheefe gouernour of fouds and streams, it foresheweth that Fishmongers if they be not well lookt to, shall goe downe as farre as Graues end in Wherries and forestall the market, to the great preiudice of the poore, that all Lent ground their fare on the benefit of Salte fishe and red herring: besides it signifieth that Brewers shal make hauocke of Theames water, and put more liquour then they were accustomed amongst their Maulte: to the ouerthrowe of certain crased Ale knights, whose morning draughtes of strong Beere is a great staye to their stomacks: a lamentable case if it be not lookt into and preuented by some speedye supplication to the woorshipfull order of ale cunners. / But in this we haue great hope that because the effects cannot surprise the cause, diuers Tapsters shall trust out more then they can get in: and although they fill their Pots but halfe full, yet for want of true dealing die in the Brewers debt.

Thus much for the watry signe of Cancer, and because this Eclipse is little visible in our horison,

I passe it ouer with this prouiso to all seafaring men, to cary more shirts then one with them a ship boord, lest to their great labor they spend many houres in murthuring their vermin on the hatches.

*The Eclipse of the
Sunne.*

THE Eclipse of the Sun according to Proclus opinion is like to produce many hot and pestilent infirmities, especiallie amongst Sumners and Pettifoggers, whose faces being combust with many fiery inflamatiues shall shew y^e dearth, that by their deuout drinking is like to ensue of Barly, if violent death take not away such cōsuming mault worms: diuers are like to be troubled with such hotte rewmes in their heads, that their haire shall fall off: and such hot agues shall raigne this yeere, with strange feuers and calamaties, that / if the Sunne were not placed in a colde signe, Renish wine would rise to ten pence a quarte before the latter end of August: but diuers good Planets being retrog[r]ade, foretelleth that Lemmans this yeere shalbe plenty, insomuch that many shall vse them to bedward, for the quallifying of their hot and inflamed stomackes. And Mars being placed neere vnto the Sunne sheweth that there shalbe a great death among people: olde women that can

liue no longer shall dye for age: and yong men that haue Vfurers to their father, shal this yeer haue great cause to laugh, for the Deuill hath made a decree, that after they are once in hell, they shall neuer rise againe to trouble their executors: Beside that by all coniecturall argumentes the influence of Mars shall be so violent, that diuers souldiers in partes beyond the seas, shall fall out for want of their paye, and heere in our meridionall clyme, great quarrelles shall be raised between man and man, especially in cafes of Law: gentry shall goe checkmate with Iustice, and coyne out countenance ofttimes equitie: the poore sitting on pennyleffe benche, shall sell their Coates to striue for a strawe, and Lawyers laugh such fooles to scorne as cannot keep their crownes in their purffes.

Further, there is like to be great falling out amongst /Church men and certaine fond sects of religion like to trouble the commons: selfe conceipters and ouer holy counterfeites that delight in singularitie, shall rise vp and despise authoritie, presuming euen to abuse the higher powers, if Saturne with a frowning influence, did not threaten them with Tibornes consequence. But whereas the Sun is darkned but by digits, and that vpon ƿ south points, it presageth great miseries to Spain and those Southerly Countries: Friers and Monks

shal heat them so this yeer with confessing of Harlots, that their crownes shal wax balde of the one accord, to the great impouering of the Spanish Barbers: Surgeons in Spain shal wax rich, and their Hospitals poore: such a pestilent mortallitie is like to fall amongst those hipocriticall massmongers. The Dukes, Marquesses & Counties shal haue their dublets clofed with such Spanish buttons, that they shal neuer proue good quiresters, for the hotte and inflamed rewmes fallen down into their throats: It is further to be feared, that because the Eclipse hapneth in Iulye, there will through the extrem heat grow such abundãce of Fleas, that women shal not goe to bed before twelue a clocke at night, for the great murders and stratagemes they are like to commit vpon those little animalls.

And whereas this Eclipse falleth out at three of the clocke in the afternoone, it foresheweth that manye shal goe soberer into Tauernes then they shal come out: and that he which drinkes hard and lyes cold, shal neuer dye of the sweate, although Gemini combust and retrog[r]ade, sheweth that some shal haue so fore a sweating, that they may sell their haire by the pound to stufte Tennice balles: but if the Beadelles of Bridewell be carefull this Summer, it may be hoped that Peticote lane may be lesse pestered with ill aires then it was wont:

and the houfes there fo cleere clenfed, that honeft women may dwell there without any dread of the whip and the carte : and I finde that the altitude of that place and of Shordich are all one eleuated, and 2 degrees, and vnder the zenith or verticall point of Venus, which prefageeth that fundry forts of men and women fhall be there resident: fome fhall be fo fhort heeld & fo quefie ftomackt that they fhall ly in their beds while noon, by which means they fhall grow fo ful of groffe humors, that they fhall be troubled with ftrange timpanies & fwellings in their bellies, vncurable for fortye weekes vntill they be helped by the aduice of fome skilfull Midwife.

Befides, other of the fame fex and faction, fhall learn to cofin young nouices, and fetch in young Gentlemen, to the great ouerthrow of youth, if fome sharpe and speedye redrefse be not fetcht from the woorshipfull Colledge of the Phifitians in the parrish of S. Brides. But heere by the waye gentle Reader, note that this Eclipse fheweth, that this yeer fhall be fome ftrange birthes of Children produced in fome monftrous forme, to the greefe of the Parentes, and fearefull fpectackle of the beholders: but becaufe the Eclipse chaunfeth Southerlye, it is little to be feared that the effectes fhall fail in England: yet fomewhat it is to bee doubted, that diuers Children fhall be borne, that

when they come to age shall not knowe their owne Fathers: others shall haue their fingers of [t]he nature of Lyme twigges, to get most parte of their liuing with fiue and a reache: some shall be born with feet like vnto Hares, that they shal run so swift, that they shall neuer tarry with maister, but trudge from poste to piller, till they take vp beggars bush for their lodging: Others shall haue Noses like Swine, that there shall not be a feast within a myle, but they shall smell it out: But especiallye it is to be doubted, that diuers women this yeere shall bee borne with two tungs, to the terrible greefe of such as shall marry them, vttering / in their furye such rough cast eloquence, that knaue and flauē shalbe but holyday woords to their husbands. And whereas this fearefull Eclipse dooth continue but an houre and a halfe, it signifieth that this yeere womens loue to their husbands shall be very shorte, some so momentarye, that it shall scarce continue from the Church doore to the wedding house: and that Hennes, Capons, Geese, and other pullin shall little haunt poore mens tables, but flye awaye with spittes in their bellies to fatte Churles houses, that pamper themselves vp with delicates and dainties: although very fewe other effectes are to be prognosticated, yet let me giue this caueat to my Countrymen, as a clause to this wonderfull Eclipse. Let such as

haue clothes enow, keep themfelues warme from taking of colde: and I would wishe rich men all this winter to sit by a good fire, and hardlye to goe to bed without a Cuppe of Sack, and that so qualified with Suger, that they proue not reumaticke: let them feede daintilye and take ease enough, and no doubt according to the iudgement of Albumazar, they are like to liue as long as they can, and not to dye one hower before their time.

Thus much for this strange Eclipse of the Sunne.





¶ *Of | the second Eclipse of the
Moone, which is like to fall out when
it chaunfeth either before the 31. of
December or els not at all,
this present yeere.*

1591.

THE second Eclipse of the Moon shalbe but little seene in England, wherevpon the effectes shall be nothing preiuditiall to our clyme: yet as the bodye of the Moone is neuer obscure in part or in whole, but some dangerous euent doo followe: so I meane to set downe briefely what is to be lookte for in these westerne partes of the worlde.

First therefore it is to bee feared, that the Danes shall this yeere bee greatly giuen to drincke, infomuch that English Beere shall there be woorth five pence a stoape, that their Hoffes and tappe houses shall be more frequented, then the Parishe Churches, and many shall haue more Spruce Beere in their bellies, then wit in their

heads: wherevpon shall / growe Apoplexies and colde palsies in their legges, that they shall diuers times not bee able to stand on their feete. Vpon this shall growe great commoditie to the Potters and Glasse makers, for it is like there shall be a great ouerthrowe of them, if there bee not some act made for drinking in blacke Jackes. But if the weather prooue seasonable, and the Haruest great, and the Barnes full of Corne: Rye is like to be cheap in Denmarke, and bread to be of a reasonable size, for the releuing of the poore. Mary, Fraunce is like to haue a great dearth of honest men, if the king preuaile not against these mutenous Rebelles of the League, and Papists in diuers places to be plentye, if God or the King rout them not out with a sharpe ouerthrow: But this hope we haue against that rascall rabble of those shauelings, that there was found in an olde booke this Prophecie spoken about Jerusaleme long since by a Jew: The tree that God hath not planted shall be pulled vp by the roots: some curious Astronomers of late dayes that are more Propheticall then Iudiciall, affirme that Martin the kill-hog for his deuout drincking (by the Pope canonized a Saint) shall rise againe in the apparell of a Minister, and tickle some of the baser sorte with such lusty humors in their braines, that / diuers selfe con-

ceited fooles shal become his disciples, and grounding their witleffe opinion on an heriticall foundation, shall seeke to ruinate authoritie, and peruert all good orders established in the Church, to the great preiudice of vnity and religion, tituling theselues by the names of Martinistes, as the Donatists grew from Donates: were it not that the Moone being in Taurus, which gouernes the neck and throat, shewes that the Squinancie shall raigne amongst them, and diuers for want of breath dye of the strangling. Now for that Capricornus is a signe wherein Luna is often resident, it prognosticateth a great death amongst hornde beafts. The Butchers shall commit wilfull murther vpon Sheepe and Oxen, and diuers Keepers kill store of Buckes, and referue no other fees to their selues but the hornes, ino-
muche that if the Person of Horne-Church in Effex take not heede, there maye hap to prooue this yeere some Cuckoldes in his Parrish.

But there is like to bee concluded by an act fet downe in Graues ende Barge, that hee that wypes his Nose and hath it not, shall forfeite his whole face, and that all such as are iealous ouer their wiues without cause, are worthie to bee punisht with / the horne plague for their labour. And whereas this Eclipse is farre from the signe Pisces, it shewes that there shall bee

much stinking fish this yere at Billings gate, and that Quinborowe oyster boates shall ofte times carrie knaues as wel as honest men: but let the Fish-wiues take heed, for if most of them proue not scoldes, yet because Pisces is a signe that gouernes the feete, they shall weare out more shooes in Lent then in anie two months beside through the whole yeere, and get their liuing by walking and crying, because they slaundered Ram alley with such a tragical infamie. The rest I conceale as friuolous, and little necessarie to be touched in this Prognostication.

A declaration of the generall disposition of sundrie conceited qualities incident vnto mens mindes & natures throughout these foure quarters of the yere, by the merrie influence of the Planets, with some other tragicall euent and obseruations worthie the noting, contayned vnder each seperated reuolution.

*And first of the inclination of the
Winter quarter.*

Winter / the first Astronomicall quarter of the yeare, according to my vsuall account, whatfoever Ptolomie says, beginneth sooner with poore men than with rich, graunted so by the malignant influence of Saturne, whose constellation is that suche as haue no money nor credit, shall want

coles & woode, and be faine to stand and starue for colde, while olde pennifathers sit and waft them selues by the fire. The winter beginning at that instant, when the Sunne makes his entrance into the first degree of Capricornus, that Hiemall solstitiall signe shewes that by naturall inclination this quarter is generally fleugmatike, and that all shall be of suche great authoritie, that the Bakers Basket shall giue the wall vnto the Brewers Barrell, and a halfe penny drier doe homage vnto a halfe penny wet. The weather and season being so colde that diuerse for feare of the frost shall sit all daye at Tables and Cardes, while their poore wiues and families fast at home for their follies. And in respect that I finde three of the seauen Planetes to be in waterie signes as Juppiter, Mars, and the Moone, it signifieth that diuerse persons both men and women for want of wine or strong drinke shall goe to bedde sober against their willes. That Sea-faring men shall haue ill lucke if / either their shippes hit agaynst rockes or sticke in the sandes, that there shall be such great hoarie frostes, that men and women shall creepe to bedde together, and some of them lie so long till they bee fetchte out with a Bason. Heere Saturne retrograde in Gemini, shewes that there shall this Winter fall such great fogs and mists, that diuerse riche men shall loose their

purfes by the high waie fide, and poore men be fo weather beaten by the crafte of vſurers, that they ſhall begge their bread by the extremitie of ſuch extortion: but Mercurie and Venus beeing congregated in Sagitarie, prognoficateth that for want of faire weather, ſuch as haue but one ſhirt ſhall go woolward till that be a waſhing, and that water-men that want fares ſhall fit and blowe their fingers till theyr fellowes row betwixte the old Swanne and Weſtminſter. And by reaſon that Mars that malignant Planet, hath nothing to doe in that Hiemall reuolution, ſouldiers this Winter for the moſt parte, ſhall lie ſtill in garrifons, and ſhall not be troubled with more monie than is neceſſarie. Beeing alſo greatly to bee feared, that through the extreame colde diuerſe poore men ſhall die at riche mennes doores: pittie ſhall bee exiled, good woorkes truſt ouer the ſea with Jacke / a lent and Hoſpitalitie baniſht as a ſigne of popiſh religion: and were it not that ſome moiſt ſhoures ſhal moderate the hardnes of the froſt, Charitie ſhould for want of houſe roome lie and freeze to death in the ſtreets: diuerſe great ſtormes are this yere to be feared, eſpecially in houſes where the wiues weare the breeches, with ſuch lowde windes, that the women ſhall ſcolde their hufbandes quight out of doores, wherevpon is like to fall great haile-ſtones as bigge as ioynd ſtooles, that ſome ſhall

haue their heads broken: and all through the froward disposition of Venus. But Mars comes in and playes the man, who beeing placed in Gemini, that gouerns armes and shoulders, pre-fageth that fundrie tall fellowes shall take heart at grasse, who armed with good cudgels, shall so lambeake these stubborne hufwiues, that the wind shall turne into another quarter, and so the weather waxe more calme and quiet. Such greate floudes are like to infue, through this Hiemall distemperature, that diuerse men shall be drowned on drie hilles, and fishe if they could not swimme, were vtterly like to perish. Eeles are like to bee deere if there bee few or none taken, and plentie of poutes to bee had in all places, especiallie in those coastes and Countries where weomen haue / not their owne willes. Nowe Gentle Reader in respect of diuerse particular circumstances, drawne from the daily motions, progressions, stations, retrogradations, aspects, and other appointments of fixed and wandring stars, I am induced to set downe that such as haue no fire, shall feele most cold, and that wierdrawers, if they plye not their worke, shall feele no great heate, that they in Ruffia shall suffer more preiudice by the sharpenesse of Winter than the Spaniards: and yet one thing is to bee hoped for at the handes of Mercurie, that this winter mony shall haue

a fall, for Philip and Mary shillings that heretofore went for 12.*d.* shall now passe from man to man for 6.*d.* a peece.

The distemperance of this quarter, is like to breede many sickeneses and fundrie diseases as well in young as in old, proceeding either of corrupt and vicious blood or of superabundance of crude and raw fleugmatike humors. As Cephalagies or paines in the head, which shall make men dizzy that some shal stagger & stumble vp & downe the streetes till they haue stolne a nappe to quiet their braines. Ach in the shoulders shal raine amongst diuerse women that haue shrewes to their husbands, and diuerse drunken men shall be pestured with surfets. Maidens this winter shall haue strange stiches & gripings / of the collicke, which diseases proceed by too much lying vpright: and men shall be troubled with such paine in the eies, that they shall not know their owne wiues from other women, with coughs, rumes, and itchings, which I omit.

Of the Spring time.

Winter being finished with the last grade of the watry signe Pisces, at the Suns ioyful progresse into the first degree of Aries. The second quarter of our vsuall yere commonly called the spring cometh next, which beginneth when graffe begins

to sproute, & trees to bud. But to treat of this present season, forasmuch as I find the planets to be contradictorily disposed, in signs & mansions of diuerse & repugnant qualities, I gather that this spring will be very ill for schollers, for they shall studie much and gain little, they shall haue more wit in their heads then money in their purses, dunces shall proue more welthie then diuers doctors, infomuch that fundrie vnlettered fooles should creep into the ministerie, if the prouident care of good Bishops did not preuent the. And by the opinion of Proclus, women are like to grow wilful, & so variable, that they shall laugh & weepe, and all with a winde: Butchers shall sell / their meate as deare as they can, and if they be not carefull, horne beastes shall bee hurtfull vnto them, and some shall bee so wedded to swines flesh, that they shall neuer be without a sowe in their house as long as they liue. This spring, or vernall resolution being naturally hot and moist, is like to be verie forward for sprouting fieldes and blooming trees, and because Saturne is in his proper mansion, olde men are like to bee froward, and craftie knaues shall neede no Brokers, vsurie shall be called good husbandrie, and men shall be counted honest by their wealth, not by their vertues. And because Aquarius has somthing to do wth this quarter, it

is to be doubted that diuers springs of water will rise vp in vintners fellers, to the great weakning of their Gascon wine, & the vtter ruine of the ancient order of the redde noses. March Beere shalbe more esteemed than small Ale.

Out of the old stocke of heresie, this spring it is to be feared, will bloome new scismaticall opinions and strange sects, as Brownists, Barowists, & such balductum deuises, to the great hinderance of the vnitie of the Church, & confusion of the true faith, if the learned doctor sir T. Tiburne be not taskte to confute such vpstart companions, with his plain & dunstable philosophie. Cancer is bu / sie in this springtide, and therefore it is like that flourishing bloomes of yong gentlemens youth, shalbe greatly anoide with caterpillers, who shall intangle them in such statutes & recognances, that they shall crie out against brokers, as Jeremy did against false prophets. Besides, thogh this last winter nipt vp diuers masterles men & cut purses, yet this spring is like to afford one euery tearme this ten yere in Westminster hall: Barbers if they haue no worke are like to grow poore, and for that Mercury is cōbust and many quarelles like to growe amongst men, lawiers shall proue rich & weare side gowns and large consciences, hauing theyr mouths open to call for fees, and theyr purses shut when they shoulde bestowe almes.

But take heed O you generation of wicked Oflers, that steale haie in the night from gentlemen's horses, and rub their teth with tallow, that they may eat little when they stand at liuery, this I prognosticate against you, that this spring, which so euer of you dies, shall leaue a knaues carcasfe in the graue behind him, and that they which liue shall hop a harlot in his clothes all the yere after. But aboue all let me not hide this secret from my countrymen, that Jupiter being in aspect with Luna, discouereth that diuers men shal drinke more thē they bleed, & Tailers shall steale nothing but what is brought vnto them, that poulters shall bee pestered with rotten eggs, & Butchers dogs make libels against Lent, that affordes no foode but herring cobs for their diet.

Diseases incident to this quarter, as by Astrologically & philosophically coniectures I can gather, are these following: Prentises that haue ben fore beaten, shall be troubled with ach in their armes, and it shall be ill for such as haue fore eies, to looke against the Sun. The plague shall raigne mortally amongst poore men, that diuerse of them shal not be able to change a man a groate. Olde women that haue taken great colde, may perhaps be troubled with the cough, and such as haue paine in their teeth, shall bee

grieuouſſie troubled with the tooth ach. Befide, ſicke folke ſhall haue worſe ſtomackes then they which be whole, and men that cannot ſleepe, ſhall take verie little reſt: with other accidentall infirmities, which I doe ouerpaſſe.

A declaration of the diſpoſition and inclination of the Summer quarter.

When the Sunne hath made his courſe through the vernal ſigns, Aries, Taurus & Gemini at his paſſage vnto the ſolfticiall eſtiuall ſigne Cancer. The third parte of an Engliſh yeere called Summer, taketh his beginning this yere: as Ptolomie ſayth, the twelfth of Iune, but as my ſkill doth coniecture, it beginneth when the wether waxeth ſo hot, that beggers ſcorne barnes and lie in the field for heate and the wormes of Saint Pancredge Church build their bowers vnder the ſhadow of Colman hedge. The predominant qualities of this quarter is heate and dryneſſe, whereby I doe gather, that through the influence of Cancer, bottle Ale ſhall be in great authoritie, and wheat ſhall doe knightes ſeruice vnto malte. Tapſters this quarter ſhall be in greater credite than Coblers, and many ſhall drinke more then they can yearne. And yet becauſe Mercurie is a ſigne that is nowe predominant, women ſhall be more troubled with fleas then men, and ſuch as want

meate shall goe fupperleffe to bedde. Besides, this quarter great hurlie burlies are like to bee feared, and greate stratagemes like to bee performed, thorough the opposition of Mars and Saturne: for Butchers are like to make great hauocke amongest flies, and beggers on Sunne shine dayes to commit great murthers vpon their rebellious vermine, and the knights of Coppersmiths hap to / doo great deedes of armes vpon Cuppes, Cannes, pots, glaffes, and black iacks: not ceasing the skirmish til they are able to stand on their legges.

Further it is to bee doubted, that because Venus is in the house of Loue, that Millers, Weauers, and Taylors shall be counted as theeuifhe as they are knauifhe: and Maides this quarter shall make fillyebubbes for their Louers, till some of them Calue with the Cowe for companye. But Iupiter in his exaltation presageth, that diuers young Gentlemen shall creepe further into the Mercers Booke in a Moneth, then they can get out in a yere: and that fundry fellowes in their filkes shall be appointed to keep Duke Humfrye company in Poules, because they know not wher to get their dinner abroad: if there be great plenty of Cherries this Summer, they are like to come to a penny the pound, and Costardmongers this Summer shall be licenft by the Wardens of their hall, to weare and

carry baskets of Apples on their heads to keepe them from the heat of the Sun. But Libra aduſt and retrograde, foretelleth that there is like to be a league between diuers bakers & the pillorye, for making their bread ſo light, and the Sun ſhall be ſo hotte, that it ſhall melt awaye the conſciences of diuers couetous men, and that / by the meanes of Venus which is in the houſe of Scorpiõ, women ſhall bee ſo loue ſicke, that Sumners and ciuil lawiers ſhall haue great fees thorough the abundance of ſuch ſinfull clients, and diuerſe ſpirites in white ſheetes ſhall ſtand in Poules and other Churches, to make their confeſſions. But this by the waie learne of me, ſhomakers ſhall proue ſo proud, that they ſhall reſuſe the name of ſouters, and the Tailer and the louſe are like to fall at martiall variance, were it not the worſhipfull company of the Botchers haue ſet downe this order, that he that lies in his bed while his clothes be mending, neede not haue a man to keepe his wardroppe. But amongſt all, the Smithes haue put vp a ſupplication to the Alecunners, that he which goes dronke to bed, and as ſoone as hee wakes dares not carouſe a hartie draught the next morning, ſhall drinke two daies together ſmall Ale for his penance.

This variable ſeaſon is like to bring variable accidents, for diuerſe diſeaſes which will much

molest the people, namely the plurifies which shall grieue many, that they shall haue farre more knauerie than they haue honestie, diuerse fluxes, and especiallie in poore mens purses, for they shall bee so laxatiue, that money shall runne out faster then / they can get it. The small pockes among children and great amongst men, infirmities in the tong, some shall doe nothing but lie with others, which I let pas.

A declaration of the inclination and disposition of the Autumnall or harvest quarter.

Haruest and the last quarter of this yeere beginneth, as I coniecture, when corne is ripe. But for the nature of this autumnall reuolution, because it beginneth in Libra I gather there shall be more holes open this quarter then in all the yeere beside, and strange euentz shall chance, for knaues shall weare smockes, and women shall haue holes in their heartes, that as fast as loue creepes in at one, it shall runne out at another. Yet Leo being a firie signe, foresheweth that diuerse men shall haue their teeth longer then their beards, and some shal be so Sun burnt with sitting in the Alehouse, that their noses shall bee able to light a candle. Others shall for want of money paune their clokes, and march mannerly in theyr

doublet and their hose. And some shall this yere haue barnes and yet want corn to put in them. Rie this yeere shall bee common in / England, and knaues shall be licenst to sel it by the pound, and he that wil not this quarter spend a pennie with his friende, by the counsayle of Albumazar, shall bee thrust quite out of all good companie for his labour.

It may be doubted that some straunge sicknesse and vnknown diseases wil happen, as hollownesse of the heart, that a man shall not know a knaue from an honest man, and vncouth consumptions of the lyuer, that diuerse men of good wealth shall by their kinde hearts spend all and die banquerouts: some shal be troubled with diseases in the throate, which cannot bee helpte without Bull the hang man plaie the skilfull Chyrurgion. Amongest the rest, many that haue faire wiues shalbe troubled with greate swelling in the browes, a disease as incurable as the goute. Some shall bee troubled with the stone, and seeke to cunning women to cure them of that disease, an infirmitie easilie amended, and the doctors of Bridewell did not punish such women Phisitians by a Statute. But the greatest disease that is to bee feared, is the Cataphalusie, that is to saie, good fellows this yeere for want of money shall oft times be contented to part companie.

And / thus (gentle reader) thou hast my prognostication, gathered by arte, and confirmed by experience, and therefore take it in good worth, for *Quod gratis grate*, and so farewell.

FINIS.



VIII.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

II. STRANGE NEWES, ETC.

1593.



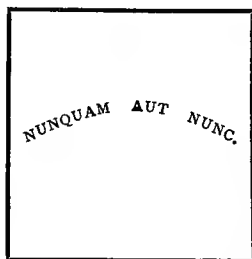
NOTE.

Mr. J. Payne Collier's reprint of "Strange Newes" (1592-3) swarms with errors. His Copyist must have served him unusually badly. Our exemplar is from the Huth Library: 45 leaves unpagcd, A 2—M 2.—G.

Strange Newes,
Of the intercept-
ing certaine Letters, and a Con-
uoy of Verfes, as they were going *Priuilie* to
viĉtuall the Low Countries.

Vnda impellitur vnda.

By *Tho. Nashe*, Gentleman.



Printed at London by *John Danter*, dwelling in
Hoſier-Lane neere Holburne
Conduit, 1593.



To the most copious Carminist
of our time, and famous perfecutor of *Priscian* his
verie friend Maister *Apis lapis*: *Tho. Nash* wish-
eth new strings to his old tawnie Purse, and
all honourable increafe of acquaint-
tance in the Cellar.

GENTLE M. William, *that learned writer*
Rhenish wine & Sugar, *in the first booke*
of his Comment vpon Red-noses, hath this
saying: veterem ferendo iniuriam inuitas nouam,
which is as much in English, as one Cuppe of nipi-
taty puls on another. In moyst consideration whereof,
as also in zealous regard of that high countenance
you shew vnto Schollers, I am bolde, in steade of new
wine, to carowse to you a cuppe of newes: which if
your worship (according to your wonted Chaucerisme)
shall accept in good part, Ile be your daily Orator
to pray, that that pure sanguine complexion of yours
may neuer be famisht with potte-lucke, that you may
tast till your last gaspe, and liue to see the confusion

of both your speciall enemies, Small Beere and Grammer rules.

It is not vnknowne to report, what a famous pottle-pot Patron you haue beene to olde Poets in your daies, & how many pounds you haue spent (and, as it were, throwne into the fire) vpon the durt of wisedome called Alcumie: Yea, | you are such an infinite Mecænas to learned men, that there is not that morsell of meat they can carue you, but you will eate for their sakes, and accept very thankfully. Thinke not, though vnder correction of your boone-companionship, I am disposd to be a little pleasant, I condemne you of anie immoderation either in eating or drinking, for I know your gouernement and carriage to bee euery way Canonically. Verilie, verilie, all poore Schollers acknowledge you as their patron, prouiditore, and supporter, for there cannot a threedbare Cloake sooner peepe forth, but you strait presse it to bee an out-brother of your bountie: three decayed Students you kept attending vpon you a long time.

Shall I presume to dilate of the grauitie of your round cap, and your dudgion dagger? It is thought they wil make you be cald vpon shortly to bee Alderman of the Stilliard. And thats well remembred: I heard saie, when this last Terme was remoued to Hartford, you fell into a greate studie and care by your selfe, to what place the Stilliard should be remoued. I promise you truelie it was a deepe medi-

tation, & such as might well haue beseemed Eldertons parliament of noses to haue sit vpon:

A tauerne in London, onelie vpon the motion, mourned al in blacke, and forbare to girt hir temples with iuie, because the grandame of good fellowship was like to depart from among them. And I wonder verie much, that you sampslownd not your selfe into a consumption with the profound cogitation of it.

Diu viuas in amore iocisque, whatsoeuer you do, beware of keeping diet. Sloth is a sinne, and one sinne (as one poison) must be expelled with another. What can he doe better that hath nothing to do, than fal a drinking to keep him | from idlenesse?

Fah, me thinks my ieafts begin alreadie to smell of the caske, with talking so much of this liquid prouinder.

In earnest thus; There is a Doctor and his Fart that haue kept a foule stinking stirre in Paules Churchyard; I crie him mercie, I flaundred him, he is scarce a Doctor till he hath done his Aets: this dodipoule, this didopper, this professed poetical braggart hath raild vpon me, without wit or art, in certaine foure penniworth of Letters and three farthing-worth of Sonnets; nor do I meane to present him and Shakerley to the Queens foole-taker for coach-horses: for two that draw more equallie in one Oratoriall yoke of vaine-glorie, there is not vnder heauen.

What saie you, Maiſter Apis lapis, will you with your eloquence and credit ſhield me from carpers? Haue you anie odde ſhreds of Latine to make this letter-munger a cockscombe of?

It ſtands you in hande to arme your ſelfe againſt him; for he ſpeaks againſt Connicatchers, and you are a Connicatcher, as Connicatching is diuided into three parts, the Verſer, the Setter, and the Barnacle.

A Setter I am ſure you are not; for you are no Muſitian: nor a Barnacle; for you neuer were of the order of the Barnardines: but the Verſer I cannot acquite you of, for M. Vaux of Lambeth brings in ſore euidence of a breakefaſt you wonne of him one morning at an vnlawful game cald riming. What lies not in you to amend, plaie the Doctor and defend.

A fellow that I am to talke with by and by, being told that his Father was a Rope-maker, excuſed the matter after this ſort; And hath neuer ſaint had reprobate to his Father? They are his owne wordes, hee cannot goe from | them. You ſee heere hee makes a Reprobate and a Ropemaker voces conuertibiles. Go too, take example by him to waſh out durt with inke, and run vp to the knees in the channell, if you bee once wetſhod. You are amongſt graue Doctōrs, and men of iudgement in both Lawes euery daie: I pray, aſke them the queſtion in my abſence, whether

Such a man as I haue describ'd this Epistler to be, one that hath a good handsome pickerdeuant, and a prettie leg to studie the Ciuill Law with, that hath made many proper rimes of the olde cut in his daies, and deserued infinitely of the state by extolling himselfe and his two brothers in euerie booke he writes: whether (I saie) such a famous piller of the Presse, now in the fourteenth or fifteenth yeare of the raigne of his Rhetorike, giuing mony to haue this his illiterat Pamphlet of Letters printed (whereas others haue monie giuen them to suffer themselues to come in Print) it is not to bee counted as flat simonie, and be liable to one and the same penaltie?

I tell you, I meane to trounce him after twentie in the hundred, and haue a bout with him with two staues and a pike for this geare.

If he get any thing by the bargaine, lette whatsoever I write hence-forward bee condemned to wrappe bumbast in.

Carouse to me good lucke, for I am resolutely bent; the best bloud of the brothers shall pledge me in vineger. O would thou hadst a quaffing boule, which, like Gawens scull, should containe a pecke, that thou mightst swapp: off a hartie draught to the successe of this voiage.

By whatsoever thy visage holdeth most pretious I beseech thee, by Iohn Dauies soule, and the blew Bore in the Spittle, I coniure thee, to draw out thy purse,

and giue me nothing | for the dedication of my Pamphlet.

Thou art a good fellow I know, and hadst rather spend ieafts than monie. Let it be the taske of thy best tearmes, to safeconduēt this booke through the enemies country.

Proceede to cherish thy surpassing carminicall arte of memorie with full cuppes (as thou dost): let Chaucer bee new scourd against the day of battaile, and Terence come but in nowe and then with the snuffe of a sentence, and Dictum puta, Weele strike it as dead as a doore naile; Haud teruntii estimo. We haue cattes meate and dogges meate inough for these mungrels. Howeuer I write merrilie, I loue and admire thy pleasant wittie humor, which no care or crosse can make unconuersable: Stil bee constant to thy content, loue poetry, hate pedantisme. Vade, vale, caue ne titubes, mandataq; frangas.

Thine intirely,

Tho. Nashe. /



To the Gentlemen *Readers*.

GENTLEMEN, the strong fayth you haue conceiu'd, that I would do workes of supererrogation in answering the Doctor, hath made mee to breake my daye with other important busines I had, and stand darting of quils a while like the Porpentine.

I know there want not welwillers to my disgrace, who say my onely Muse is contention; and other, that with *Tiberius Cæsar* pretending to see in the darke, talke of strange obiectes by them discouered in the night, when in truth they are nothing else but the glimmering of their eies.

I will not holde the candle to the Deuill, vnmaske my holiday Muse to enuie; but if any such deepe infighted detracter will challenge mee to whatsoeuer quiet aduenture of Art, wherein he thinkes mee least conuersant, hee shall finde that I am *Tam Mercurio quàm Marti*, a Scholler in some thing else but contention.

If idle wittes will needes tye knottes on smooth bulrushes with their tongues, faith, the worlde

might thinke I had little to attend, if I should goe about to vnloofe them with my penne.

I / cannot tell how it comes to passe, but in these ill eide daies of ours, euery man delights with *Ixion* to beget children of clouds, digge for Pearles in dunghils, and wrest oyle out of iron.

Poore *Pierce Pennileffe* haue they turnd to a coniuring booke, for there is not that line in it, with which they doo not seeke to raise vp a Ghost, and, like the hog that conuertes the fixth part of his meate into bristels, so haue they conuerted fixe parts of my booke into bitternes.

Aretine, in a Commedie of his, wittily complaineth that vpstart Commenters, with their Annotations and gloses, had extorted that sence and Morall out of *Petrarch*, which if *Petrarch* were aliue, a hundred Strappadoes might not make him confesse or subscribe too ; So may I complaine that rash heads, vpstart Interpreters, haue extorted & rakte that vnreuerent meaning out of my lines, which a thousand deaths cannot make mee ere grant that I dreamd off.

To them that are abused by their owne ieaalous collections, and no determind trespassse of mine, this aduice, by the way of example, will I giue.

One comming to Doctour *Perne* on a time, and telling him that hee was miserably raild on such a day in a Sermon in Saint Maries in *Cam-*

bridge, I but quoth he, (in his puling manner of speaking) did he name me, did he name me? I warrant you, goe and aske him, and hee will say he meant not mee; So they that are vn-groundedly offended at any thing in *Pierce Pen-nileffe*, first let them looke if I did name them; if not, but the matter hangeth in suspence, let them send to mee for my exposition, and not buy it at the seconde hand, and I doe not doubt but they will be throughly satisfied.

Hee / that wraps himselfe in earth, like the Foxe, to catch birds, may haps haue a heauy cart go oter him before he be aware, and breake his backe.

A number of Apes may get the glowworme in the night and thinke to kindle fire with it, because it glifters so, but, God wote, they are beguiled, it proues in the end to be but fools fire: the poore worme alone with their blowing warmed, they starud for colde whiles their wood is vntoucht. Who but a Foppe wil labour to anatomize a Flye? Fables were free for any bondman to speake in old time, as *Æsop*e for an instance: their allusion was not restrained to any particular humor of spite, but generally applyed to a generall vice. Now a man may not talke of a dog, but it is surmised he aimes at him that giueth the dog in his Crest: hee cannot name

straw, but hee must plucke a wheate sheaffe in pieces, *Intelligendo faciunt vt nihil intelligent.*

What euer they be that thus persecute Art (as the Alcumists are said to persecute Nature) I would wish them to abate the edge of their wit, and not grinde their colours so harde: hauing founde that which is blacke, let them not, with our forenamed Gold-falsifiers, seeke for a substance that is blacker than black, or angle for frogs in a cleare fountaine.

From the admonition of these vncurteous misconsterers, I come to *The kilcow champion of the three brethren*; he forsooth wil be the first that shal giue *Pierce Penilesse* a *non placet*.

It is not inough that hee bepist his credite, about twelue yeeres ago, with *Three proper and wittie familiar letters*, but still he must be running on the *letter*, and abusing the Queenes English without pittie or mercie.

Bee / it knowne vnto you (Christian Readers) this man is a forestaller of the market of fame, an ingrosser of glorie, a mountebanke of strange wordes, a meere marchant of babies and conny-fkins.

Hold vp thy hand, G. H., thou art heere indited for an incrocher vpon the fee-simple of the Latin, anemie to Carriers, as one that takes their occupation out of their hands, and dost

nothing but transport letters vp and downe in thy owne commendation, a conspiratour and practifer to make Printers rich, by making thyselfe ridiculous, a manifest briber of Bookefellers and Stationers, to helpe thee to sell away thy bookes (whose impression thou paidst for) that thou mayst haue money to goe home to Trinitie Hall to discharge thy commons.

I say no more but Lord haue mercie vpon thee, for thou art false into his hands that will plague thee.

Gentlemen, will you be instructed in the quarrell that hath cauld him lay about him with his penne and incke horne so couragiously? About two yeeres since (a fatall time to familiar Epistles) a certayne Theologicall gimpanado, a demie diuine, no higher than a Tailors pressing iron, brother to this huge booke-bearer, that writes himselfe *One of the Emperour Iustinians Courtiers*, tooke vpon him to set his foote to mine, and ouer crow mee with comparatiue tearmes. I protest I neuer turnd vp any cowheard to looke for this scarabe flye. I had no conceit as then of discovering a breed of fooles in the three brothers bookes: marry, when I beheld ordinance planted on edge of the pulpit against me, & that there was no remedy but the blind Vicar would needs let flie at me with his Churchdore keies, & curse me with bel, book and

candle, because in my Alphabet of Idiots I had ouer / skipt the Hs, what could I doe but draw vpon him with my penne, and defende my selfe with it and a paper buckler as well as I might.

Say, I am as verie a Turke as hee that three yeeres ago ranne vpon ropes, if euer I speld eyther his or anie of his kindreds name in reproch, before hee barkt against mee as one of the enemies of the Lambe of God, and fetcht allusions out of the Buttery to debase mee.

Heere beginneth the fray. I vpbraide godly predication with his wicked conuersation, I squirt inke into his decayed eyes with iniquitie to mend their diseased sight, that they may a little better descend into my schollership and learning. The Ecclesiasticall duns, instead of recouery, waxeth starke blind thereby (as a preseruative to some, is poyson to others): hee gets an olde Fencer, his brother, to be reuenged on me for my Phisicke; who, flourishing about my eares with his two hand sworde of Oratory and Poetry, peradventure shakes some of the rust of it on my shoulders, but otherwise strikes mee not but with the shadowe of it, which is no more than a flappe with the false scabberd of contumelie: whether am I in this case to arme my selfe against his intent of iniurie, or fitte still with my finger in my mouth, in hope to bee one of simplicities martyrs?

A quest of honorable minded Caualiers go vppon it, and if they shall find by the Law of armes or of ale, that I, beeing first prouokt, am to bee inioynde to the peace, or be sworne true seruant to cowardize & patience, when wrong preffeth mee to the warres; then will I bind my selfe prentise to a Cobler, and fresh vnderlay all those writings of mine that haue trodde awrie.

Be /aduertised (gentle audience) that the *Doctors* proceedings haue thrust vpon mee this fowterly Metaphor, who, first contriuing his confutation in a short Pamphlet of six leaues, like a paire of summer pumps: afterward (winter growing on) clapt a paire of double soales on it like a good husband, added eight sheets more, and prickt those sheets or soales, as full of the hob-nayles of reprobation as they could sticke.

It is not those his new clowted startops iwis, that shall carry him out of the durt.

Sweet Gentlemen, be but indifferent, and you shal see me desperate. Heere lies my hatte, and there my cloake, to which I resemble my two Epistles, being the vpper garments of my booke, as the other of my body: Saint Fame
for mee, and thus I runne
vpon him.

Tho. Nashe. /



The foure Letters Confuted.



ABRIEL, and not onely *Gabriel*, but *Gabrielissime Gabriel*, no Angell but *ANGELOS*, id est, *Nuntius*, a Fawne-guest Messenger twixt Maister *Bird* and Maister *Demetrius*: Behold, here stands he that will make it good, on thy foure Letters bodie, that thou art a filthy vaine foole. Thy booke I commend; as very well printed: and like wondrous well, because all men dislike it.

I agree with thee that there are in it *some matters of note*, for there are a great many bare-foote rimes in it, that goe as iumpe as a Fiddle, with euery ballet-makers note: and if according to their manner, you had tun'd them ouer the head, it had beene nere the worfe, for by that meanes you might haue had your name chaunted in euery corner of the streete, then the which there can be nothing more *melodiouslie addoulce* to

your *deuine Entelechy*. O they would haue trowld off brauely to the tune of *O man in Desperation*, and, like *Marenzos* Madrigals, the mournfull note naturally haue affected the miserable Dittie.

Doe you knowe your owne misbegotten bodgery *Entelechy* / and *addoulce*? With these two Her-mophrodite phrascs, being halfe Latin and halfe English, haft thou puld out the very guts of the inkehorne.

LETTERS.

To all curteous mindes that will vouchsafe the reading.

Comment.

In their absnce, this be deliuered to *Megge Curtis* in Shorditch, to stop mustard pots with.

The particular Contents.

L. *A Præface to courteous mindes.*

C. As much to fay as Proface, much good do it you, would it were better for you.

L. *A Letter to M. Emanuel Demetrius, with a sonnet thereto annexed.*

C. That is, as it were a purgation vpon a vomit, buskins vpon pantophles.

L. *A Letter to M. Bird.*

C. Or little matter wrapt vp in many words.

L. *A Letter to euerie fauorable and indifferent Reader.*

C. *Id est*, An exhortation to all Readers, that they shall reade nothing but his works.

L. *Another letter to the same, extorted after the rest.*

C. By interpretation, a Letter whereof his inuention had a hard stoole, and yet it was for his ease, though not for his honestie : and so forth, as the Text shall direct you at large.

Heere / beginneth the first Epistle and first Booke of Orator Gabriell to'the Catilinarie or Philippicks.

Wherein is diuulged that venum is venum and will infect, that that which is done cannot (de facto) be vndone, that fauour is a curteous Reader, and G. H. your thankfull debter.

A Comment vpon the Text.

The learned Orator in this Epistle *taketh precise order* he will not be too eloquent, and yet it shall be (1) *as well for enditing vnworthie to be published, as for publishing vnworthie to be endited.*

C. He had many aduerfaries in those times that he wrote, amongst the which Cloth-breeches and Veluet-breeches (his fathers pouerty, and his owne pride, were none of the meanest).

After them start up one *Pierce Pennileffe*, and

hee likewise was a stumbling blocke in his way. (Penurie not long tarries after pride; pray all the ropes in *Saffron Walden* that I do not prophesie). Amen, Amen, quoth M. *Bird* and M. *Demetrius*.

Hee forbears to speake much in this place of the one or the other, *because his letters are more forward to accuse them than their owne books to condemne them*; yet for a touch by the way, hee talks that Greene is no liuerey / for this winter, *it is pitifully blasted and faded in euerie meade*, by the strong breath of his barbarisme.

Hee hath a twitch at *Pierce Pennileffe* too, at the parting stile, and tearms him *the Deuils Orator by profession, and his Dames Poet by practise*: wherein mee thinks (the surreuerence of his works not impaired) he hath verie highly ouershotte himselfe: for no more is *Pierce Pennileffe* to be cald the Deuils Orator for making a Supplication to the Deuill, than hee is to bee helde for a Rhethoritian, for setting foorth *Gabrielis Scuruei Rhetor*, wherein hee thought to haue knockt out the braines of poore *Tullies Orator*, but in veritie did nothing else, but gather a flaunting vnfaury fore-horfe nossegay out of his well furnished garland.

The aduancemēt of the Deuils Oratorship, which he ascribeth to *Pierce Pennileffe*, me thinks had beene a fit place for his Doctorship, when hee mist

the Oratorship of the Vniuersitie, of which in the sequele of his booke, he most slanderously complaineth. Doctor *Perne, Greene*, no dead man he spareth.

What he should *subaudi* by his *Dames Poet*, I scarce apprehend, except this, that *Pierce* his Father was *Dame Lawes[on's]* Poet, and writte many goodly stories of her in *An Almond for [a] Parrat*.

Those that will take a Lecture in our Orators letters must not *read, excuse, commend, credite or beleue anie approoued truth* in *Pierce Pennileffe*, especially if it be anything that vpbraideth the great Baboune his brother.

Hee will stoppe the beginning, id est, when hee hath come behind a man and broke his head, seeke to bind him to the good abearing, *or els the ende were like to proue pernicious and perillous* to his confusion.

Some/what hee mutters of *defamation and iust commendation*, & what a hell it is for him, that hath built his heauen in vaine-glory, to bee puld by the fleue and bidde *respice fnem*, looke backe to his Fathers house ; but I ouerslippe it as friuolous, because all the world knowes him better than he knowes himselfe, & though he play the Pharise neuer so in iustifying his owne innocence, theres none will beleue him.

Let this bee spoken once for all, as I haue a

foule to faue, till this day in all my life, with tongue nor penne, did I euer in the leaft worde or tittle derogate from the Doctor. If his brother (without any former prouocation on my part, God is my witnesse) rayld on me grossely, expresly namde mee, comparde me to *Martin*, indeuord to take from mee all estimation of Arte or witte, haue I not cause to bestirre mee?

Gabriell, I will bestirre mee, for all like an Alehouse Knight, thou crau'ft of *Iustice to do thee reason*; as for *impudencie and calumny*, I returne them in thy face, that, in one booke of tenne sheets of paper, hast published aboue two hundred lies.

Had they been wittie lies, or merry lies, they would neuer haue greeu'd mee: but palpable lies, damned lies, lies as big as one of the Guardes chynes of beefe, who can abide?

Ile make thee of my counsaile, because I loue thee (not): when I was in Cambridge, and but a childe, I was indifferently perswaded of thee: mee thought by thy apparell and thy gate, thou shouldst haue beene a fine fellow: Little did I suspect that thou wert brother to *Io. Pæan* (whom inwardly I alwaies grudgd at for writing against *Aristotle*) or any of the Hs of Hempthall, but a Cauallier of a clean contrary house: now thou hast quite spoild thy selfe, from the foote to the /head I can tell how thou art fashioned.

Teterrime frater, and not *fraterrime frater*, maist thou verie wofully exclaime, for in helping him, thou hast crackt thy credit through the ring, made thy infamie current as farre as the Queenes coyne goes.

But it may be thou hast a fider cloke for this quarrell: thou wilt obiect, thy Father was abusd, & that made thee write. What, by mee, or *Greene*, or both?

If by *Greene* and not mee, thou shouldst haue written against *Greene* and not mee. If by both, I will answere for both, but not by both, therefore I will aunswere but for one.

Giue an instance, if thou canst for thy life, wherin in any leafe of *Pierce Penileffe* I had so much as halfe a fillables relation to thee, or offred one iot of indignitie to thy Father, more than naming the greatest dignitie he hath, when for varietie of Epithites, I calde thy brother *the sonne of a Ropemaker*.

We shall haue a good sonne of you anone, if you be ashamd of your fathers occupation: ah thou wilt nere thriue, that art beholding to a trade, and canst not abide to heare of it.

Thou dost liue by the gallows, & wouldst not haue a shooe to put on thy foot, if thy father had no traffike with the hangman. Had I a Ropemaker to my father, & some body had cast it in

my teeth, I would foorthwith haue writ in praise of Ropemakers, & prou'd it by soũd fillogistry to be one of the 7 liberal sciences.

Somewhat I am priuie to the cause of *Greenes* inueighing against the three brothers. Thy hot-spirited brother *Richard* (a notable ruffian with his pen) hauing first tooke vpon him in his blundring *Persual*, to play the lacke of both sides twixt *Martin* and vs, and snarld priuily at *Pap-hatchet*, *Pasquill*, & others, that opposde / themselues against the open flander of that mightie platformer of Atheisme, presently after dribbed forth another fooles bolt, a booke I shoulde say, which he christened *The Lambe of God*.

That booke was a learned booke, a labourd booke; for three yere before he put it in print, he had preacht it all without booke.

I my selfe haue some of it in a booke of Sermons that my Tutor at Cambridge made mee gather euery Sunday. Then being very yoong, I counted it the abiectest and frothiest forme of Diuinitie that came in that place. Now more confirmed in age and Art, I confirme my ill opinion of it.

Neither do I vrge this, as if it were a hainous thing for a man to put sermons in print after hee preacht them, but obserue the proud humor of the pert *Didimus*, that thinks nothing he speakes but

deferues to be put in print, and speakes not that sentence in the Pulpit, which before he rough-hewes not ouer with his penne. Besides, I taxe him for turning an olde coate (like a Broker) and felling it for a new.

These and a thousand more imperfections, might haue beene buried with his bookes in the bottome of a drie-fatte, and there slept quietly amongst the shauings of the Presse, if in his Epistle he had not beene so arrogantly censoriall.

Not mee alone did hee reuile and dare to the combat, but glickt at *Pap-hatchet* once more, and misfermed all our other Poets and writers about London, piperly make-plaies and make-bates.

Hence *Greene*, beeing chiefe agent for the companie (for hee writ more than foure other, how well I will not fay: but *Sat citò, si sat bene*) tooke occasion to canuaze him a little in his Cloth-breeches and / Veluet-breeches, and because by some probable collections hee gest the elder brothers hand was in it, he coupled them both in one yoake, and, to fulfill the prouerbe *Tria sunt omnia*, thrust in the third brother, who made a perfect parriall of Pamphleters.

About some seauen or eight lines it was which hath pluckt on an inuestiue of so many leaues. Had hee liu'd, *Gabriel*, and thou shouldst so vnarteficially and odiouly libeld against him as

thou haft done, he would haue made thee an example of ignominy to all ages that are to come, and driuen thee to eate thy owne booke butterd, as I fawe him make an Apparriter once in a Tauern eate his Citation, waxe and all, very handfomly feru'd twixt two difhes.

Out vppon thee for an arrant dog-killer, ftrike a man when he is dead?

So Hares may pull dead Lions by the beards.

Memorandum. I borrowed this fentence out of a Play. The Theater Poets hall, hath many more fuch prouerbes to perfecute thee with, becaufe thou haft fo fcornefully derided their profefion, and defpitefully maligned honeft fports.

Before I vnbowell the leane Carcafe of thy book any further, Ile drinke one cup of lambswool *to the Lambe of God and his enemies.*

In the firft foure leaues of it, I haue fingled out thefe Godly and fruitfull obferuations.

Noble Lord, I doe it euen upon former premisses, not for any future conseqents.

My booke is not worthy of fo honorable fpecialitie as your Patronage.

I will not profecute it with Theological peculiarars, but from the mouth of the fword I fpeake, &c.

The hearts of the wicked pant, their fpirits faile them, they may well call for butter out of a Lordlie difh.

You that bee gentle Readers, doe you not laugh at this Lawiers english *of former premisses and future consequents?*

O finicalitie, *your patronages speciallitie*, but if he profecute it with *Theologicall peculiars*, we must needs thrust him *inter oues et boues & reliqua pecora campi*.

From the mouth of the sword I speake it, *that butter out of a Lordly dish* is but lewd diet for the Pulpit.

But this is not halfe the littour of incke-hornisme, that those foure pages haue pigd. I must tell you of the *Oſtonarium of Ramus*, the *Sesquiamus of Phrigius*, the *Carthusianisme of Gulielmus Rikel*, of *Annals, Diaries, Chronologies, & Tropologicall schoolemen*, the *Abetilis of the Æthiopians or Pretoionnans*, of *Gulielmus minatensis*, & *S. Ierome allegorized*, *Abdias, Lyra, Gryson, Porta, Pantaleon*.

All which hee reckons vp to make the world beleeeue he hath read much, but alleadgeth nothing out of them: Nor, I thinke, on my conscience, euer read or knew what they meane, but he hath stole them by the wholesale out of some Bookfellers Catalogue, or a table of tractats.

Here are some of his profounde Annotations: *Iacob tooke Leah, for his bedfellow in the darke by night, insteede of Rachell, whereby I learne to buy*

my wife candle to goe to bed withall, and admit her not by darke, but by light.

Iacob was deceiued by Labans words: ergo, Obligations are better than bills, and we must belieue no man, except he will waxe and multiplie in words, and call inke & parchment to witnes.

Iacob laide pilled rods with white strakes in the watring places of the sheepe, whereby I note that in carnal mixture | the senses are opened.

Iudge you that be Fathers of the Church, whether this be fit matter to edifie or no.

It was not for nothing brother Richard, that *Greene* told you you kist your Parishioners wiues with holy kisses, for you that wil talk of *opening the senses by carnal mixture* (the very act of lecherie) in a Theological Treatise, and in the Pulpit, I am afraide, in a priuater place you will practise as much as you speake: *Homines raro, nisi male locuti, male faciunt.* . *Olet hircum, olet hircum*, anie modest eare would abhorre to heare it.

Farewell vncleane Vicar, and God make thee an honest man, for thou art too baudy for mee to deale withall.

It followes in the Text,

To my verie good friend Maister Emanuell Démetrius.

This letter of *M. Bird* to *M. Demetrius*, should seeme, by all reference or collation of stiles, to

bee a Letter which M. *Birds* secretarie, *Doctour Gabriell*, indited for him in his owne praise, and got him to fette his hand to when he had done. Or rather, it is no letter, but a certificate (such as Rogues haue) from the head man of the Parish where hee was borne, *that Gabriell is an excellent generall Scholler, and his Father of good behauiour.*

We will not beleue it except wee see the Towne seale fette to it: but, say wee should beleue it, what doth it make for thee? Haue the Townesmen of *Saffron Waldon* euer heard thee preach, that they should commend thee for an excellent generall scholler? or (because thou professest thy self a Ciuilian) hast thou sollicited any of their causes in the bawdy Courtes therabouts? If not, go your wayes a dolt as you came: Maister / *Birdes* Letter shall not repriue you from the ladder.

But Veluet-breeches and Cloth-breeches (by the iudgement of the best man of none of the least towns in *Essex*) *is a fantasticall and fond Dialogue, and one of the most licentious intollerable inuectiues that euer hee read.*

Why?

In it is abused an auncient neighbour of his.

How is he abused?

In stead of his name, hee is called by the craft hee gets his liuing with.

He hath borne office in Walden aboute twentie yere since (hoc est, had the keeping of the Towne stocke; alias the stocks) Ergo he is no Rope-maker.

He hath maintaind foure sonnes at Cambridge; Ergo Greene is a lewd fellow to say he gets his liuing backward.

Three of his sonnes vniversally ridiculoustie reputed of (for inamoratos on their owne works) in both Vniuersities and the whole Realme. The fourth is shrunke in the wetting, or else the Print shoulde haue heard of him.

One of the three (whom the Quip entitles the Phytition) returning sicke from Norwitch to Linne in Julie last, was past writing any more Almanackes, before Greene ere imagined God had thought so well of him to take him to him.

Liur post fata quiescat. Mother Liuers of Newington is a better fortune-teller than he was a Phytition.

A / Dash through the Dudgen Sonnet against
Greene.

Put vp thy fimiter O gentle Peter,
Author and halter make but ill meeter.

I scorne to answer thy mishapen rime:
Blocks haue cald schollers bayards ere this time.

I would trot a false gallop through the rest of

his ragged Verfes, but that if I should retort his rime dogrell aright, I muſt make my verfes (as he doth his) run hobling like a Brewers Cart vpon the ſtones, and obferue no length in their feete ; which were *abſurdum per abſurdus*, to infect my vaine with his imitation.

The Analafiſ of the whole is this: an olde mechanical meeter-munger would faine raile, if he had anie witte. If *Greene* were *dogge-ficke* and *brain-ficke*, fure he (poore ſecular Satiriſt) is dolt-ficke and brainleſſe, that with the toothleſſe gums of his Poetry ſo betuggeth a dead man.

But I cannot be induced to beleue a graue man of his fort ſhould be ſo rauingly bent : when all comes to all, *ſhorteſt vowels* and *longeſt mutes* will bewray it to bee a webbe of your owne loomes, *M. Gabriel* : you *mute* foorth many ſuch phraſes in the courſe of your booke, which I will point at as I paſſe by.

I will not robbe you of your due commendation in anything : in this Sonnet you haue counterfeited the ſtile of the olde Vice in the Morals, as right vp and downe as may be.

Let. *Greene, the Connycatcher, of this dreame the author,*

For his daintie deuife deſerueth the hauter.

Vice. / Hey nan anon fir, soft let me make water,
 Whip it to go, Ile kisse my maisters daughter.
 Tum diddy, tum da, falangte do diddle:
 Sol la me fa fol, conatus in fiddle.

I am afraide your *Doctors fart* will fall out to be a fatall foyft to your breeches, if we followe you at the hard heeles as we haue begun.

Thou shalt not breath a whit, trip and goe, turne ouer a new leafe.

Maister Bird, in the absence of M. Demetrius.
 Perge porrò. *I found his wife curteous*: barlady fir, but this is suspitious.

A woman is well holpen vp that does you any curtesie in the absence of her husband, when you cannot keepe it to your selfe, but you must blab it in print.

If it were any other but *Mistris Demetrius* (whome I haue heard to be a modest sober woman, and indued with many vertues) I would play vpon it a litle more. In regard that shee is so, I forbear; and craue pardon in that I haue spoken so much.

Yet would I haue her vnderstand how well *the generall scholler* her guest, hath rewarded hir for his kind entertainment, by bringing her name in question in print.

M. Bird and *Demetrius*, I knowe neither of

you by fight, but this Ile say, being of that welth you are, you had better haue spent a great deale of money, than come in the mouth of this base companion.

What reason haue I (seeing your names subscribed as his bolsterer, in a matter of defame that concernes mee) but to go through stich with you, as well as him?

He thinks to ouer-bear vs as poore beggers with the / great ostentation of your rich acquaintance.

Lette all Noblemen take heede how they giue this *Thrafo* the least becke or countenance, for if they bestowe but halfe a glaunce on him, hele straight put it verie solemnly in print, and make it ten times more than it is.

Ile tell you a merry ieast.

The time was when this *Timothie Tiptoes* made a Latine Oration to her Majestie. Her Highnes as she is vnto all her subiects most gracious: so to schollers she is more louing and affable than any Prince vnder heauen. In which respect, of her owne vertue and not his desert, it pleased hir so to humble the height of hir iudgment, as to grace him a little whiles he was pronouncing, by these or such like tearmes. *Tis a good pretie fellow, a lookes like an Italian*, and after hee had concluded, to call him to kisse her royall hand. Herevpon he goes home to his studie, all inтраунced, and

writes a whole volume of Verses ; first, *De vultu Itali*, of the countenance of the Italian ; and then *De osculo manus*, of his kissing the Queenes hande. Which two Latin poems he publisht in a booke of his cald *Ædes Valdineses*, proclaiming thereby (as it were to England Fraunce, Italie and Spaine) what fauour hee was in with her Maiestie.

I dismisse this *Parenthesis*, and come to his next *businesse* : which indeede is his first *businesse* : for tyll *Greene* awakte him out of his selfe admiring contemplation, hee had nothing to doe but walke vnder the Ewe tree at Trinitie hall, and say :

What may I call this tree, an Ewe tree, O bonny Ewe tree,
Needes to thy boughs will bow this knee, and vaile my bonnetto.

Or / make verses of weathercocks on the top of steeple, as he did once of the weathercocke of Alhallows in Cambridge :

O thou weathercocke that stands on the top of the church of
Alhallows,
Come thy waies down if thou darst for thy crowne, and take
the wall on vs.

O Heathenish and Pagan Hexameters, come thy waies down frō thy *Doctourship*, & learne thy Primer of Poetry ouer again, for certainly thy pen is in state of a Reprobate with all men of iudgement and reckoning.

Come thy waies down from thy *Doctourship*,

said I? *Erraui demens*, thou neuer wenst vp to it yet.

Fie on hypocrisie and Diffimulation, that men should make themselues better than they are !

Alas a Gods will, thou art but a plaine moth-eaten Maister of Art, and neuer pollutedst thy selfe with any plaistrie or dawbing of Doctourship.

Lift Pauls Churchyard (the peruser of euerie mans works, & Exchange of all Authors), you are a many of you honest fellows, and fauour men of wit.

So it is that a good Gowne and a well pruned paire of moustachios, hauing studied sixteene yeare to make thirteene ill english Hexameters, came to the Vniversity Court *regentium & non*, to sue for a commission to carry two faces in a hoode : they not vsing to deny honour to any man that deserued it, bad him performe all the Schollerlike ceremonies and disputatiue right appertaining thereto, and he should bee installed.

Noli me tangere : he likt none of that.

A stripling that hath an indifferent prety stocke of reputation abroade in the worlde already, and some credit amongst his neighbours, as he thinketh, would be / loth to ieoperd all at one throwe at the dice.

If hee should haue disputed for his degree, descended *in arenam & puluerem Philosophicum*, and

haue been foild, *Aih me* quoth Wit in lamentable fort, what should haue become of him? hee might haue beene shot through ere hee were aware, with a Sillogisme.

No point, *Ergo*, it were wisely done of goodman Boores sonne, if he should goe to the warres for honor, and returne with a wodden legge, when he may buy a Captaineſhip at home better cheape.

Pumps and Pantofles, because they were well blackt and glistered iolly freshly on it, being rubd ouer with inke, had their grace at length to be Doctour, *Ea lege*, that they should do their acts (that is, performe more than they were able).

Curſt be the time that euer there were any obligations made with conditions, *Vnde habeas quærit nemo, ſed oportet habere*, Howe Dorbell comes to bee Doctour none asks, but Doctour hee muſt bee to make him right worſhipfull.

Acts are but idle wordes, and the Scripture ſaith, wee muſt giue account for euery idle word.

Pumps and Pantofles ſweare they will iet away with a cleare conſcience at the daie of iudgement, and therefore do no Acts, giue no offence with idle words, onelie like a Hauke let flie at a Partridge, that turnes the taile and betakes her to a walnut-tree, ſo to Oxford they trudge, hauing their grace *ad diſputandum*, and there are confirmed in the ſame degree they tooke at Cambridge: which is

as if a Prentise heere in London, as soone as hee is enrould, should runne to some such Towne as Ipswich, and there craue to haue his Freedome confirmd as of London: which, in truth is / no Freedome, because hee hath not seru'd out his prentiship.

Trust mee not for a dodkin, if there bee not all the Doctourship hee hath, yet will the insolent incke worme write himselfe Right worshipfull of the Lawes, and personate this man and that man, calling him *my good friend Maister Doctour* at euery word.

Doctour or no Doctour, *Greene surfeted not of pickled hearing, but of exceeding feare* of his Familiar Epistles.

Hee offred in his extreamest want twentie shillings to the Printer to leaue out the matter of the three brothers.

Haud facile credo, I am sure the Printer beeing of that honestie that I take him for, will not affirme it.

Marry this I must say, there was a learned Doctour of Phisicke (to whom Greene in his sicknesse sent for counsaile) that hauing read ouer the booke of Veluetbreeches and Clothbreeches, and laughed merrilie at the three brothers legend, wild Green in any case either to mittigate it, or leaue it out: Not for any extraordinarie account hee made

of the fraternitie of fooles, but for one of them was proceeded in the same facultie of phisicke hee profest, and willinglie hee would haue none of that excellent calling ill spoken off.

This was the cause of the altring of it, the feare of his Phisitions displeasure, and not anie feare else.

I keepe your *conscious minde*, with all other odde ends of your halfe fac'd english, till the full conclusion of my booke, where in an honorable *Index* they shall be placed according to their degree and fegnioritie.

Wee / are to vexe you mightely for plucking *Elderton* out of the ashes of his Ale, and not letting him inioy his nappie muse of ballad making to himselfe, but now, when he is as dead as dead beere, you must bee finding fault with the brewing of his meeters.

Hough *Thomas Delone, Phillip Stubs, Robert Armin, &c.*, your father *Elderton* is abus'd. Reuenge, reuenge on course paper and want of matter, that hath most sacriligiously contaminated the diuine spirit & quintessence of a penny a quart.

Helter skelter, feare no colours, course him, trounce him, one cup of perfect bonauenture licour will inspire you with more wit and Schollership than hee hath thrust into his whole packet of Letters.

You that bee lookers on, perhaps imagine I

talke like a merry man, and not in good earnest, when I say that *Eldertons* ghost and *Gabriel* are at such ods: but then you knowe nothing, for there hath beene a monstrous emulation twixt *Elderton* and him time out of mind. Yea, they were riuals in riming foure yeare before the great frost. Hee expressely writ against him, 1580, *In his short but sharpe and learned iudgement of Earth-quakes.*

Broome boyes, and cornecutters, (or whatfoeuer trade is more contemptible) come not in his way, stand fortie foote from the execution place of his furie, for else in the full tide of his standish, he will carrie your occupations handsmooth out of towne before him, besmeare them, drowne them: downe the riuer they goe *Priuely* to the Ile of Dogges with his Pamphlets.

O it is a pestilent libeller against beggers: hee meanes shortly to set foorth a booke cald his Paraphrase vpon Paris Garden, wherein hee will so tamper / with the interpreter of the Puppits, and betouse Harry of Tame and great Ned, that *Titius shall not vpbraide Caius with euerie thing and nothing nor Zoylus anie more flurt Homer, nor Therfites fling at Agamemnon.*

Holla, holla, holla, *flurt, fling*, what reafty Rhetoricke haue we here? certes, certes, brother *hobby doddy*, your penne is a coult by cockes body.

As touching the libertie of Orators and Poets, I will conferre with thee somewhat grauely, although thou beest a goose-cappe and hast no iudgement.

A libertie they haue thou sayst, *but no liberty without bounds, no licence without limitation.*

Iesu what mister wonders dost thou tell us? euery thing hath an end, and a pudding hath two.

That libertie, Poets of late in their inuētiues haue exceeded: they haue borne their sword vp where it is not lawfull for a poynado that is but the page of prowesse, to intermeddle.

Thou bringst in *Mother Hubbard* for an instance. Go no further, but here confesse thy selfe a flat nodgcombe before all this congregation; for thou hast dealt by thy friend as homely as thou didst by thy father.

Who publikely accusde or of late brought *Mother Hubbard* into question, that thou shouldst by rehearfall rekindle against him the sparkes of displeasure that were quenched?

Forgot he the *pure sanguine of his Fairy Queene*, sayst thou?

A *pure sanguine* sot art thou, that in vaine-glory to haue *Spencer* known for thy friend, and that thou hast some interest in him, censereft him worse than his deadliest enimie would do.

If / any man were vnderferuedly toucht in it,

thou haft reuiued his difgrace that was fo toucht in it, by renaming it, when it was worn out of al mens mouths and minds.

Befides, whereas before I thought it a made matter of fome malicious moralizers againft him, and no fubftance of flaunder in truth, now, when thou (that proclaimeft thy felfe the only familiar of his bofome, and therefore fhouldft know his fetretes) giues it out in print that he ouerfhotte himfelfe therein ; it cannot chufe but be fufpected to be fo indeed.

Immortall *Spencer*, no frailtie hath thy fame, but the imputation of this Idiots friendship : vpon an vnspotted *Pegasus* fhould thy gorgeous attired *Fayrie Queene* ride triumphant through all reports dominions, but that this mud-born bubble, this bile on the browe of the Vniuerfitie, this bladder of pride newe blowne, challengeth fome intereft in her prosperitie.

Of pitch who hath any vfe at all, fhall be abufd by it in the end.

High graffe that florifheth for a feafon on the houfe toppe, fadeth before the harueft calts for it, and maye well make a fayre fhewe, but hath no fweetneffe in it. Such is this Affe in presenti, this groffe painted image of pride, who would faine counterfeite a good witte, but fcornfull pittie, his beft patron, knows it becomes him as ill, as an

vnweldy Elephant to imitate a whelp in his wantonnes.

I wote not how it fals out, but his inuention is ouerweapond ; he hath some good words, but he cannot writhe them and toffe them to and fro nimibly, or so bring them about, that hee maye make one streight thrust at his enemies face.

Coldly and dully *idem per idem*, who cannot indite? but / with life and spirit to limne deadnes it selfe, *Hoc est oratoris proprium*.

L. *Inuectiues by fauour haue beene too bolde, and Satires by vsurpation too presumptuous*. What pleasure brings this to the reader? Iacke of the Falcon in Cambridge can say as much, and giue no reason for it.

But I can prompt you with a demonstration wherin *Inuectiues* haue been too bold. Do you remember what you writ in your Item for Earthquakes, of *double fac'd Iani, changeable Camelions, Aspen leaues, painted sheathes, and sepulchers, Asses in Lions skinnes, dunghill cockes, slipperie eeles, dormise, &c.*? Besides your testimoniall of Doctor *Perne*, wherein it pleased you, of your singular liberalitie and bountie, to bestowe vpon [him] this beautifull *Encomium*:—*A busie and dizzie head, a brazen forehead, a leaden braine, a wodden witte, a copper face, a stonie brest, a factious and eluish heart, a founder of nouelties, a confounder of his owne and*

his friendes good giftes, a morning booke-worme, an afternoon malt-worme, a right Iugler, as full of his sleightes, wiles, fetches, casts of legerdemaine, toyes to mocke Apes withall, odde shifts and knauish praētises, as his skinne can holde.

Notwithstanding all this, you *desie, cut and long-taile, that can accuse you of any scandalous part either in word or deede.*

Tully, Horace, Archilochus, Aristophanes, Lucian, Iulian, Aretine, goe for no paiment with you: their declamatory files, brought to the grand test of your iudgement, are found counterfeit, they are a venemous and viprous brood of railers, because they haue brought in a new kind of a quicke fight, which your decrepite flow-mouing capacitie cannot fadge with.

Tush, tush, you take the graue peake vppon you too / much: who would think you could so easily shake off your olde friendes? Did not you in the fortie one Page, line 2, your Epistles to *Collin Clout* vse this speech?

Extra iocum, I like your Dreames passing well: and the rather because they sauer of that singular extraordinary vaine and inuention which I euer fancied most, and in a manner admired onely in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pasquil.

Dic sodes (godamercie on Dicke Sothis soule, for he was a better dauncer than thou art an enditer,

& with his legges he made some Muficke (there is none in thy letters) anfwere mee briefly, I fay, to the point, haue I varied one vowell from thy originall text in this allegation? If not, I cannot fee how the Doctours may well be reconcild, one while to commend a man *because his writings fauour of that fingular extraordinarie vaine, which he onely admired in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pasquil*: and then in another booke afterward, to come and call thofe *fingular extraordinarie admired men a venemous and viperous brood of railers*.

The auncienter fort of Poets and Oratours fhall plead their owne worthineffe.

Tullie neuer ouerreached himfelf in railing fo much as in flatterie. His *Phillippicks* (found Phyfick applide to a body that could not difgeft it) are the things that efppecially commended him to this art-thriuing age of ours, and had not thefe beene, hee would certainly haue beene fentenced by a generall verdit of histories for a timerous time-pleafer.

Who cannot draw a curtaine before a deformed picture? *Plautus* perfonated no Parafite, but he made him a flauie or a bondman.

Fawning and crouching are the naturall geftures of feare, and if it bee a vertue for a vaffaile to licke a mans fhooes with his tongue, fure it is

but borrowed from the dogges ; and so is biting too, if it bee accompanied with ouer lowd barking, or in such wise as it cannot pinch but it must breake the flesh and drawe bloud.

Horace, Perseus, Iuvenall, my poore iudgment lendeth you plentiful allowance of applause : yet had you, with the *Phrigian* melodie, that stirreth men vp to battaile and furie, mixt the *Dorian* tune, that fauoreth mirth and pleasure, your vn-fugred pilles (howeuer excellently medicinable) would not haue beene so harsh in the swallowing. So likewise *Archilochus*, thou like the preachers to the Curtizans in Roome, that expound to them all Lawe and no Gospell, art all gall and no spleene. Hence came it to passe, that with the meere efficacie of thy incensed *Iambicks*, thou mad'st a man runne and hang himselfe that had angerd thee.

Thee I imbrace *Aristophanes*, not so much for thy Comœdie of the clowd, which thou wrotst against philosophers, as for in al other thy inuentions thou interfusest delight with reprehension.

Lucian, Iulian, Aretine, all three admirably blest in the abundant giftes of art and nature : yet Religion, which you sought to ruinate, hath ruined your good names, and the opposing of your eyes against the bright funne, hath causd the worlde condemne your fight in all other

things. I proteſt, were you ought elſe but abhominable Atheiſtes, I would obſtinately defende you, onely becauſe *Laureate Gabriell* articles againſt you.

This I will iuſtifie againſt any *Dromidote* Ergoniſt whatſoeuer, there is no other vnlaſciuious uſe or end of / poetry, but to infamize vice, and magnifie vertue, and that if they aſſemble all the examples of verſe-founders from *Homer* to *Hugh Copland*, they ſhall not find anie of them but hath encountred with the generall abuſes of the times.

Whatſoeuer harpeth not of one of theſe two ſtrings of praife and reproofe, is as it were a *Dirige* in prickſong without anie dittie ſet to it, that haply may tickle the eare, but neuer edifies.

In the Romaine common-wealths it was lawful for Poets to reprove that enormitie in the higheſt chairs of authoritie, which none elſe durſt touch, alwaies the ſacred Maieſtie of their *Augustus* kept inuiolate: for that was a Plannet exalted aboue their Hexameter horizon, & it was capitall to them in the higheſt degree to diſpute of his ſetting and riſing, or ſearch inquiſitiuely into his predominance and influence,

The ſecrets of God muſt not be ſearcht into. Kings are Gods on earth, their actions muſt not be founded by their ſubieſts.

Seneca, *Neroes* tutor, founde his death in no

verfe but *Oſtauia*. Imperious *Lucan* ſprinkled but one drop of bloud on his imperiall chayre, and periſht by him alſo.

Ouid once ſaw *Augustus* in a place where he would not haue beene ſeene ; he was exile preſently to thoſe countries no happy man hears of.

Long might hee, in a blinde *Metamorphoſis*, haue playd vppon all the wenches in Roome, and regiſtred their priuie ſcapes, vpbayded inhospitatlie with the fable of *Licaon*: alluded to ſome *Ambodexter* Lawyer vnder the ſtorie of *Battus*: haue deſcribed a noted vnthrift, whoſe ſubſtaunce hawkes and hounds haue deuoured, in the tale of *Aſteon*, that was eaten vp / by his owne dogges: mockt *Alcumifteſ* with *Midas*: picturde inamaratos vnder *Narciſſus*: and ſhrouded a picked effeminate *Carpet Knight* vnder the fictionate perſon of *Hermophroditus*; with a thouſand more ſuch vnexileable ouer-thwart merrimentes, if luſt had not led him beyond the proſpect of his birth, or hee ſeene a meaner man finning than an Emperour.

Sancta Maria ora pro nobis, how hath my pen loſt it ſelfe in a croude of Poets.

Gaffer Iobbernoule, once more well ouer-taken, how doſt thou? how doſt thou? holde vp thy heade, man, take no care: though *Greene* be dead, yet I may liue to doe thee good.

But by the meanes of his death thou art deprived of the remedie in lawe, which thou intendedst to haue against him, for calling thy father Ropemaker. Mas, thats true: what action will it beare? *Nihil pro nihilo*, none in law: what it will doe vpon the stage I cannot tell; for there a man maye make action besides his part, when he hath nothing at all to say: and if there, it is but a clownish action that it will beare: for what can bee made of a Ropemaker more than a Clowne? *Will Kempe*, I mistrust it will fall to thy lot for a merriment, one of these dayes.

In short tearmes, thus I demur vpon thy long Kentish-tayld declaration against *Greene*.

Hee inherited more vertues than vices: a iolly long red peake, like the spire of a steeple, hee cherisht continually without cutting, whereat a man might hang a Iewell, it was so sharpe and pendant.

Why should art answer for the infirmities of maners? Hee had his faultes, and thou thy follyes.

Debt and deadly sinne, who is not subiect to? With / any notorious crime I neuer knew him tainted; (& yet tainting is no infamous surgerie for him that hath beene in so many hote skirmishes).

A good fellowe hee was, and would haue drunke

with thee for more *angels* then the Lord thou libeldst on *gawe thee in Christs Colledge*; and in one yeare hee pift as much againft the walls, as thou and thy two brothers fpend in three.

In a night & a day would he haue yarkt vp a Pamphlet as well as in feauen yeare, and glad was that Printer that might bee fo blest to pay him deare for the very dregs of his wit.

Hee made no account of winning credite by his workes, as thou doft, that doft no good workes, but thinkes to bee famofed by a ftrong faith of thine owne worthines: his onely care was to haue a fpel in his purfe to coniure vp a good cup of wine with at all times.

For the lowfie circumftance of his pouerty before his death, and fending that miserable writte to his wife, it cannot be but thou lyeft, learned *Gabriell*.

I and one of my fellowes, *Will Monox* (Haft thou neuer heard of him and his great dagger?) were in company with him a month before he died, at that fatall banquet of Rhenifh wine and pickled hearing (if thou wilt needs haue it fo) and then the inuentorie of his apparrell came to more than three fhillings (though thou faift the contrarie). I know a Broker, in a fpruce leather ierkin with a great number of golde Rings on his fingers, and a bunch of keies at his girdle, fhall

giue you thirty shillings for the doublet alone, if you can helpe him to it. Harke in your eare, hee had a very faire Cloake with sleeues, of a graue goose turd greene: it would serue you as fine as may bee: No more words if you bee wise, play the good husband / and listen after it, you may buy it ten shillings better cheape than it cost him. By S. Siluer, it is good to bee circumspect in casting for the worlde, theres a great many ropes go to ten shillings. If you want a greasy paire of silke stockings also, to shew yourselfe in at the Court, they are to be had too amongst his mouables. *Frustra fit per plura quod fieri potest per pauciora*: It is policie to take a rich penniworth whiles it is offred.

Alas euen his fellow writer, that proper yoong man, almost scorns to cope with thee, thou art such a crow troden Ass: dost thou *in some respects wish him well and spare his name?* in some respects so doth hee wish thee as well? (*hoc est*, to be as well knowne for a foole as my Lord Welles) and promiseth by me to talke very sparingly of thy praise. For thy name, hee will not stoupe to plucke it out of the mire, and put it in his mouth.

By this blessed cuppe of facke which I now holde in my hand, and drinke to the health of all Christen foules in, thou art a puissant Epitapher.

Yea? thy Muses foot of the twelues; old long

Meg of Westminster? Then, I trowe thou wilt stride ouer *Greenes* graue and not stumble: If you doe, wee shall come to your taking vp.

Letter.

*Here lies the man whom Mistris Ifam cround with
bays,*

She she that ioyd to heare her nightingales sweete lays.

Comment.

Here Mistris *Ifam*; *Gabriel* floutes thy bays:
Scratch out his eyes that printeth thy dispraise.

She she she will scratch, and like a scritchng night-owle come and make a dismal noise vnder thy chamber / windowe, for deriding her so duntically. A bigge fat lusty wench it is, that hath an arme like an Amazon, and will bang thee abhominably, if euer shee catch thee in her quarters. It is not your *Poet Garish*, and your *forehorse of the parish* that shall redeeme you from her fingers, but shee will *make actuall prooffe of you*, according as you desire of God in the vnder following lines.

The next weeke, Maister *Bird* (if his inke-pot haue a cleare current) hee will haue at you with a cap-case full of French occurrences, that is, shape you a messe of newes out of the second course of his conceit, as his brother is said out of the fabulous

abundance of his braine to haue inuented the newes out of *Calabria* (*Iohn Doletas* prophesie of flying dragons, commets, Earthquakes, and inundations).

I am sure it is not yet worne out of mens scorn, for euery Miller made a comment of it, and not an oyster wife but mockt it.

When that fly-boat of Frenchery is once launcht, your trenchor attendant, *Gamaliel Hobgoblin*, intends to tickle vp a Treatise of the barley kurnell, which you fet in your garden, out of which there sprung (as you auouched) twelue feuerall eares of corne at one time.

Redoubted Parma was neuer so matcht if hee kindle the match of his meeterdome, and let driue at him with a volley of verses. Let not his principallitie trust too much to it, because his name is Latin for a shield; for *Poet Hobbinoll*, hauing a gallant wit and a brazen penne, will honourably bethinke him, and euen ambitiously frame his stile to a noble emulation of *Liuius*, *Homer* and the diuine spirits of all ages, as hee hath done to the emulation of *Tullie* heeretofore, when hee compiled a Pamphlet called *Ciceronis Consolatio ad Dolobellam*, and publisht it as a newe part of *Tullie*, which had bin hidde in a Wall a thousand and odde yeares, and was found out by him before it euer found being.

The circumstance was this ; going downe the water at Cambridge one summer euening, and asking certaine questions of the Eccho at Barnewell wall (as the manner is passing by) holding her verie narrowly to the poynt, she reuealed vnto him what a treasure shee had hidden amongst her stones ; namely, this new part of *Gabrielis Ciceronis consolatio ad Dolobellam* : and though she was verie loath to disclose it, yet because shee knewe not how soone God might call her ; *videlicet*, how sodainely shee might fall ; to discharge her conscience before her death, shee would deliuer it vp as freely vnto him as euer it was hers : come and digge for it, hee shoulde haue it. Neuer more glad was shee in her life, that since shee must needes surrender it to the light, she had chaunst vppon such a Cardinall Corrigidore of incongruitie, and *Tullies* nexte and immediate successeur, vnder *Carre*, to whose carefull repolishing she might commit it.

Keepe it, quoth she ?

No, if it were a booke of golde it is THINE : reade it, new print it, dedicate it *from thy gallery at Trinitie Hall* to whom thou wilt.

Whether hee vsde a spade or a mattocke for the vnburying of it I know not, but extant it is, and of a hundred I haue heard that it is his.

O *Gabriell*, if thou hast any manhood in thy starchit peake, looke vpon me and weepe not.

From this day forward shall a whole armie of boies come / wondring about thee, as thou goest in the street, and cry *kulleloo, kulleloo, with whup hoo*, there goes the Ape of *Tully*: tih he he, steale *Tully*, steale *Tully*, away with the Assfe in the Lions skinne.

Nay, but in sadnesse, is it not a sinfull thing for a Scholler & a Christian to turne *Tully*? a Turke would neuer doe it.

Be counsaile in thy calamitie, write no more *Consolatio ad Dolabellam*, but *Consolatio ad Doctore Gabrielem*; thy selfe comfort thy selfe, and learn to make a vertue of contempt.

Ad ruentem parietem ne inclina, is a prouerbe which would haue preuented all this, if thou couldst haue suffered thy selfe to haue bene directed by it: for first and formost, hadst not thou stept forth to vnder-prop the ruinous wall of thy brothers reputation, I had neuer medled with thee; if thou hadst not leand too much to an olde wall, when thou pluckst *Tullie* out of a wall, the damnation of this Iest had bin yet vnbegotten.

He that hath borne faile in two tempests of shame, makes a sport of shippe-wracke of good name euer after.

The wall of the welfare of Fraunce that is started from her King, her true foundation, thy writinges, (more wretched than France) would

faine cleave vnto, if they could tell how, and count it a felicity to haue the oportunitie of so heroicall an argument.

God helpe *Alexander*, if hee haue no other Poet to emblazon his atchieuements but *Cherillus*.

High refolued Earle of *Essex*, and victorious Sir *John Norris*, Englands champions, enuied tranquillities confidence, vnworthy are your aduentures Iliades to bee reported by fuch a ragged reede as the iar/ring Pipe of this *Batillus*. The Portugals & Frenchmens feare will lend your Honors richer ornaments, than his low-flighted affection (fortunes summer follower) can frame them.

The feale that I haue fet to your vertues be filence ; the argument of prayfe is vnauthorized in any mans mouth but olde age.

When the better parte of youthes feruence is boyld away, and that the showres of many forrowes haue seafond our greene heads with experience, with the wither-fac'd weather-beaten Mariner, that talks quaking and shudderingly of a storme that hee hath newly toyld through, our wordes will bee written in our visage.

Euen as the funne, so no science shines in his compleate glory till it be ready to decline.

These be the conclusions, that gray hairs prune & cut downe the prosperitie of yong yeares with as fast as it aspires, but let the feare Oake looke

himselfe in the glasse of truth, and he shal find that *Methusalems* blessing is imbecillitie, bestowed on any creature but the Foxe, who neuer is a right Foxe till he be ripe for the dunghill.

If my stile holde on this sober Mules pace but a sheete or two further, I shall haue a long beard lyke an Irish mantle, droppe out of my mouth before I be aware.

Marry God forfend, for at no hand can I endure to haue my cheeks muffled vp in furre like a Muscouian, or weare any of this Welch freeze on my face.

O it is a miserable thing to dresse haire like towe twixt a mans teeth, when one cannot drinke but hee must thrust a great sponge into the cup, & so cleanse his coole porridge, as it were, through a strayner ere it / comes to his lippes.

This second Epistle I haue said prettily well too: I thinke we were best begin THIRDLY WHEREAS, for feare a volume steale vpon vs vnlookt for.

The Arrainment and Execution of the Third Letter.

To euerie Reader fauourably or indifferently affected.

TEXT, stand to the Barre. Peace there belowe.

*Albeit for these twelue or thirteene yeares no man hath
beene more loath, or more scrupulous than my selfe, &c.*

The body of mee, hee begins like a proclama-
tion: sufficeth it wee knowe you, your minde,
though you say no more.

Is not this your drift? you would haue the
worlde suppose you were vrgde to that which pro-
ceeded of your owne good nature: like some that
will seeme to bee intreated to take a high place of
preferment vppon them, which priuilie before they
haue prayde and payde for, and put all their
strenght to clymbe vp to.

You would foist in *non causam pro causa*, haue
it thought your flight from your olde companions
obscuritie and silence, was onely, with *Æneas*, to
carry your Father on your backe, through the fire
of slaunder, and by that shift, with a false plea of
patience, vniustly driuen from his kingdome, filch
a way the harts of the Queenes liege people.

The backe of those creple excuses I haue broke
in / the beginning of my booke: if you haue anie
new infringement to destitute the inditement of
forgerie that I bring against you, so it is.

Heere enters Argumentum a *testimonio humano*, like
Tamberlaine drawne in a chariot by foure Kings.

I THAT IN MY YOVTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE
 WITH THE EXCEEDING COMMENDATION OF
 THE GREATEST SCHOLLER IN THE
 WORLD, &c.

Ille ego qui quondam gracili modulatus auena.

Ah neighbourhood, neighbourhood, dead and
 buried art thou with Robinhood: a poore
 creature here is faine to commend himselfe, for
 want of friendes to speake for him.

Not the least, but the greatest Schollers in the
 WORLD haue not only but exceedingly fedde him
 fat in his humor of *Braggadochio Glorioso*.

*Yea Spencer him hath often Homer tearmd,
 And Mounfier Bodkin vowd as much as he;
 Yet cares not Nashe for him a halfe peny.*

Lamentable, lamentable, that an indifferent vn-
 toward ciuill Lawyer, who hath read *Plutarch de
 utilitate capienda ab inimicis*, & can talke of *Titius
 and Sempronius*, should be no more set by, but SET
 BY, thrust aside, while his betters carry the bredth
 of the street before them.

Misery will humble the haughtiest heart in the
 world: *Habemus reum confitentē*: he confesseth
 himself a sinner in vn sufficiency; yet for all that

the aduerfitie of / vniuerfall obloquy hath laide a heauie hande on him, ftill he retaineth (like concealed land) fome part of his proud mind in a beggers purfe, scorneth to fay *Fortune my foe*, or afke a good word for Gods fake of anie man.

In the plainneffe of his puft vp nature, he will defie anie man that dare accufe him of that he is.

Why, why infractiffime PISTLEPRAGMOS, though you were yong in yeares, fresh in courage, greene in experience, and ouer-weaning in conceipt (we will refufe nothing that you giue vs) when you priuately wrote the letters *that afterward* (by no other but your felfe) *were publicquely diuulged*; yet when the bladder is burft that held you vp fwimming in felfe loue, you must not be difcontented though you fink.

I haue *toucht the vlcer of your Oratourship*, in requiting the nick-name of *The Devils Oratour*. An Vlcer you may well christen it, as an vlcer is a fwelling, for it was a fwelling of ambition, no *modest petition* of anie merit of yours that did craue it.

The olde Foxe Doctour Perne throughly discovered you for a yoong Soppe, or elfe halfe a word of our *high Chauncelors commendation* had stood with him inuiolable as an Act of Parliament.

Great men, in writing to thofe they are acquainted with, haue priue watch-words of

denyall, euen in the highest degree of praising ; they haue many followers, whose dutifull seruice must not bee disgrac'd with a bitter repulse in anie suite, though vnlawfull.

It may bee, some of these long deseruers of his followers labourd him for thee: hee, like *Argus*, hauing eyes that pierce into all estates, saw thee when thou wert vnseene of thy selfe, and knowing thee to bee vnworthy / of any place of worth, would not discountenance his men in so smal a matter, but writ for thee very vehemently outwardly, when the soule of his letter (into which thy shallowe braine could not descend) included thy vtter mislike.

Yong bloud is hot, youth hastie, ingenuitie open, abuse impatient, choller stomachous, temptations busie. In a word, the Gentleman was vext, and cutte his bridle for verie anger.

The tickling and stirring inuectiue vaine, the puffing and swelling Satiricall spirit came vpon him, as it came vpon *Coppinger* and *A[r]thington*, when they mounted into the pease-cart in Cheape-side and preacht: needes hee must cast vp certaine crude humours of English Hexameter Verfes that lay vpon his stomacke: a Noble-man stooode in his way, as he was vomiting, and from top to toe he all to berayd him with *Tuscanisme*.

The Mappe of Cambridge lay not farre off

when he was in the depth of his drudgery, some part of the excrements of his anger fell vpon it: poor Doctour *Pernes* picture stode in a corner of that *Mappe*, and by the misdemeanour of his mouth it was cleane defac'd.

Signior Immerito (so called becaufe *he was and is his friend* vnderferuedly) was counterfeitly brought in to play a part in that his *Enterlude of Epistles* that was hist at, thinking his very name (as the name of *Ned Allen* on the common stage) was able to make an ill matter good.

I durst on my credit vndertake, *Spencer* was no way priuie to the committing of them to the print. Committing I may well call it, for in my opinion *G. H.* should not haue reapt so much discredite by beeing com/mitted to *Newgate*, as by committing that misbeleeuing prose to the *Presse*.

I haue vsually seene vncircumcised doltage haue the porch of his *Panims* pilfries very hugely pestred with praises. *Hay gee* (*Gentlemen*) comes in with his *Plowmans* whistle in prayse of *Peter Scurse* the penne-man, and *Turlery Ginkes*, in a light foote Iigge, libels in commendation of little witte verie loftily; but for an Author to renounce his *Christendome* to write in his owne commendation, to refuse the name which his *Godfathers* and *Godmothers* gaue him in his baptisme, and call himselfe a *well-willer* to both the writers, when hee is the onely

writer himfelfe ; with what face doe you thinke he can aunfwere it at the day of iudgement? *Eft in te facies sunt apti lufibus anni: Gabriell*, thou canft play at faft and loofe as well as anie man in England.

I will not lye and backbite thee as thou haft done mee, but are not thefe thy wordes *to the curteous Buyer* ?

Shew mee or Immerito, two English letters in print, in all pointes equall to thefe, both for the matter it felfe, and alfo for the manner of handling, and fay wee neuer faw good English in our liues.

Againe, *I esteeme them for two of the rareft and fineft treaties, as well for ingenuous deuifing, as fignificant uttering, & cleanly conueying of his matter, that euer I read in this tongue, & I hartily thank God for beftowing vpon vs fuch proper and able men with their penne.*

You muft conceit, hee was his chamber-fellowe *welwillers* cloke, when he fpake this: the white-liuerd flauie was modeft, and had not the hart to fay fo much in his owne perfon, but he muft put on the vizard of *an vndifcreete friend*.

It / is not worth the rehearfal: *he fcribled it in ieaft for exercife of his fpeech and ftile, &c., and it was the finifter hap of thofe vnfortunate letters to be derided & fcoft at throughout the whole realme.*

The fharpeft part of them were read ouer at

Counsell Table, and he referd ouer to the Fleet, to beare his old verfe-fellow noble M. *Valanger* company.

There was no remedie for it but melancholy patience.

A recantation he was glad to make *by way of articles or positions*, which hee moderates with a milder name of an *apologie*, & that recantation purchast his libertie. Wherefore in grateful lieu of the benefit he receiu'd by it (*although he hath hitherto vnworthily suppress't it*) yet he means to take occasion by this extraordinary prouocation to publish it, with not so few as fortie such *Academicall exercises*, and sundrie other *politike discourses*.

And I deeme he will be as good as his word, for euer yet it hath beene his wont, if he writ but a letter to any friend of his, in the way of thanks for the potte of butter, gāmon of bacon, or cheefe that he sent to him, straight to giue coppies of it abroad in the world, and propound it to yong gentlemen he came in company with, as a more necessary & refined methode of familiar Epistles than the English tongue had hitherto been priuie to.

Lord that men shoulde bee so maliciously bent to frame a matter of some thing: he takes a pleasurable delight to behaue himself so that he may be laught at: how would you prate and insult, if you knewe as much by him, as he knows by himselfe.

Nashe, do thy worst, the three brothers bid a Fico for thee: discommend thou them neuer so much, they will palpably praise, and so consequently dispraise, / themselues more in one booke they set foorth, than thou canst disparage them in tenne: yea, rather than faile, Maister *Bird* shall leaue copping out letters of newes, and meeter it mischieuoufly in maintenance of their scurrilitiship and ruditie.

Three to one, *par ma foy*, is oddes: not one of them writes an Almanacke, but hee reckons vp all his brothers.

Bee it spoken heere in priuate, *Musa Richardetti* *fratrizat sat bene pretty*: the Muse of dappert Dickie doth sing as sweet as a cricket.

Nosti manum & stilum, Gabriel? it is thine owne verse in *Ædes Valdinenses*, all faue the inserting of *pretty* instead of *certè*, for rimes sake.

Had phisition *Iohn* liu'd, or not dyde, a little afore Dog-dayes, a sinode of Pispots would haue concluded, that *Pierce Pennileffe* should be confounded without reprue.

The Spanyards cald their inuasiue fleete agaynst England the Nauie inuincible, yet it was ouercome. Lowe shrubbes haue outliu'd high Cedars: one true man is stronger than two theeues: *Gabriell* & *Richard*, I proclaime open warres with you: March on, *Iocus, Ludus, Lepos*, my valiaunt men

at armes, and forrage the frontiers of his *Fantasticalitie* as you haue begun.

Tubalcan, alias *Tuball*, first founder of Farriers Hall, heere is a great complaint made, that *vtriusque Academiæ Robertus Greene* hath mockt thee, because hee saide, that thou wert the first inuenter of Musicke: so *Gabriell Howliglasse* was the first inuenter of English Hexameter verses. *Quid respondes?* canst thou brooke it, yea or no? Is it any treason to thy well tuned hammers to say they begat so renowned a childe as Musicke? Neither thy hammers nor thou, I know, if they were put to their booke oaths, will euer say it.

The Hexameter verse, I graunt to be a Gentleman of an auncient house (so is many an english begger), yet this Clyme of ours hee cannot thriue in; our speech is too craggy for him to set his plough in: hee goes twitching and hopping in our language like a man running vpon quagmiers, vp the hill in one Syllable, and down the dale in another, retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himselfe with amongst the Greeks and Latins.

Homer and Virgil, two valorous Authors, yet were they neuer knighted: they wrote in Hexameter verses: *Ergo*, *Chaucer*, and *Spencer*, the *Homer* and *Virgil* of England, were farre ouerseene that they wrote not all their Poems in Hexameter verses also.

In many Countries veluet and Satten is a commoner weare than cloth among vs: *Ergo*, wee must leaue wearing of cloth, and goe euerie one in veluet and fatten, because other Countries vse so.

The text will not beare it, good *Gilgilis Hobberdehoy*.

Our english tongue is nothing too good, but too bad to imitate the Greeke and Latine.

Master *Stannyhurst* (though otherwise learned) trod a foule lumbring boystrous wallowing measure, in his translation of *Virgil*. He had neuer been praised by *Gabriel* for his labour, if therein hee had not bin so famously absurd.

Greene for dispraising his practise in that kinde, is the *Greene Maister of the blacke Art, the founder of vglie oathes, the father of misbegotten Infortunatus, the scriuener of Crossebiters, the Patriark of Shifters, &c. The Monarch of Crossebiters, the wretched fellowe Prince / of Beggars: Emperour of Shifters, hee had cald him before, but like a drunken man, that remembers not in the morning what he speakes ouer night, still he fetcheth Metaphors from conny-catchers, & doth nothing but torment vs with tautologies.*

Why thou arrant butter whore, thou cotqueane & scrattop of scoldes, wilt thou neuer leaue afflictting a dead Carcasse, continually read the rethorick

lecture of Ramme Allie? a wispe, a wispe, rippe, rippe, you kitchin-stuffe wrangler!

Wert thou put in the Fleete for pamphleting? Bedlem were a meeter place for thee. Be not ashamd of your promotion: they did you honor that said you were Fleete-bound, for men of honor haue failde in that Fleete.

Waft paper made thee betake thy selfe to *Limbo Patrum*: had it beene a booke that had beene vendible yet, the opproby had beene the lesse, but for Chandlers merchandize to be so massacred, for sheets that serue for nothing but to wrappe the excrements of hufwiuerie in, *Proh Deum*, what a spite is it. I haue seene your name cutte with a knife in a wall of the Fleete, I, when I went to visit a friend of mine there.

Let Maister *Butler* of Cambridge, his testimoniall end this controuersie, who at that time that thy ioyes were in the Fleeting, and thou crying for the Lords sake out at an iron windowe, in a lane not farre from Ludgate hill, questiond some of his companions verie inquisitiuelie that were newlie come from London, what nouelties they brought home with them, amongst the rest, he broke into this Hexamiter interrogatorie very abruptlie,

But ah what newes doe you heare of that good Gabriel huffe
 snuffe,
 Knowne to the world for a foole, and clapt in the Fleete for a
 Rimer.

Ist true *Gibraltar*? haue I found you? It was not without foundation that you burst into that magnifical insultation,—I THAT IN MY YOUTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE, &c.,—for M. *Butler*, for a Phisition being none of the least Schollers, hath commended you exceedingly for a foole & a Rimer. *He that threatned to conjure vp Martins wit*, hath written some thing too, in your praise, in Paphatchet: for all you accuse him to haue courtlie incens't the Earle of Oxford against you. Marke him well: hee is but a little fellow, but hee hath one of the best wits in England. Should he take thee in hand againe (as he flieth from such inferiour concertation), I prophecie that there woulde more gentle Readers die of a merrie mortality, ingendred by the eternall iests he would maule thee with, than there haue done of this last infection. I my self, that inioy but a mite of wit in comparison of his talēt, in pure affection to my natiue country, make my stile carry a presse faile, am fain to cut off half the streame of thy sport-breeding confusion, for feare it shoulde cause a generall hicket throughout England.

Greene, I can spare thy reuenge no more roome in this booke: thou hast Phisition *Iohn* with thee; cope thou with him, & let me alone with the Ciuilian & Deuine, whom, if I liue, I will so vncessantly haunt, that to auoid the hot chase of my

fierie quill, they shalbe constrained to enconfe themselves in an olde Vrinall case that their brother left behind him. Yet ere I bid thee good night, receiue some notes as touching his phisicallity deceafed. *He had his grace to be Doct̄or ere he died.* As time may worke all things. *In Norfolke where hee practised, he was reputed a proper toward man at a medicine for the toothake, & one of the skilfullest Phisitions, in casting the heauens water, that euer came there.*

*How | well beloued of the chiefeſt Gentlemen (& Gentlewomen eſpecially) in that ſhire, it is incredible to bee ſpoken. *Aſtra petit diſertus*: hee is gone to heauen to write more Aſtrologicall diſcourſes: his brothers liue to inherite his olde gownes, and remember his notable ſayings, amongſt the which was one: *Vale Galene*, farewell, mine owne deare *Gabriell*: *Valete humanæ artes*, heart and good will, but neuer a ragge of money.*

Tunc tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.

Cloth-breeches houſe is burnt, and the flame goes a feaſting³ to *Pierce Penileſſe* houſe next.

Neuer til now, *Gregory Habberdine*, went thy foure letters vp Newgate, vp Holburne, vp Tiburne, to hanging.

Gentlemen, by that which hath been already laid open, I doe not doubt but you are vnwaueringly reſolued, this indigeſted Chaos of Doctour-

ship, and greedy pothunter after applause, is an apparant Publican and finner, a selfe-loue surfetted fot, a broken-winded galdbacke Iade, that hath borne vp his head in his time, but now is quite foundred & tired; a scholler in nothing but the scum of schollership, a stale foker at *Tullies Offices*, the droane of droanes, and maister drumble-bee of non proficients. What hath he wrote but hath had a wofull end? When did he dispute but hee duld all his auditorie? his Poetry more spiritleffe than smal beere, his Oratory Arts bastard, not able to make a man rauishingly weepe, that hath an Onion at his eye. In Latin, like a louse, he hath manie legges, many lockes fleec'd from *Tullie*, to carry away and cloath a little body of matter, but yet hee moues but slowly, is apparaild verie poorely.

In English, ice is not so cold, yet on the ice of ignorance / will he slide. No wise man pittie him that perisheth so wilfully.

Iudge the world, iudge the highest Courts of appeale from the miscarried worlds iudgement (Cambridge and Oxford) wherein I haue trespassed in *Pierce Pennilessse*, that hee should talke of *gnashing of teeth*, *yong Phaetons*, *yong Icar*, *yong Chorebi*, *young Babingtons*.

Neuer was I in earnest, til thus he twitted me with the comparison of a traitour.

Babington, high was thy birth, I a bondslaue of fortune in comparifon of thee: thy fall greater than *Phaetons*, thy offence as heynous as *Iudaffes*. May neuer more fuch foule feeds of offence be fowne in fo faire a fhape, may they be markt alwayes to mifchiefe that meane as thou didft. The braunches of thy ftocke remaines yet vn-blafsted with anie difobedience. God forbid that our forheades fhould euer bee blotted with our forefathers mifdemeyors. Die, ill deeds, with your vngracious ill dooers: the liuing haue no portion with the dead: hell once paid his due, heauen gates are open to fucceeding pofteritie.

Prate of *Pierce Penneleffe* and his *paltrie* as long as thou wilt, I will play at put-pinne with thee for all that thou art woorth, but of thy betters gette thee a better difcourfing penne before thou defcantes of,

L. Greenes inwardeft companion pinched with want, vexed with difcredit, tormented with other mens felicitie, and ouerwhelmed with his own miferie, in a rauing and frantike moode, moft desperately exhibiteth a Supplication to the Deuill.

C. Heerein thou thinkeft thou haft won the fpurs from all writers, but God and Dame Fiction knows thou /art farre wide of thy ayme; for neither was I *Greenes* companion any more than for a carowfe or two, nor pincht with any vn-

gentleman-like want when I inuented *Pierce Pennilessse*.

Pauper non est cui rerum suppetit usus: only the discontented meditation of learning, generally now a dayes little valued, and her professors set at naught & dishartened, caused mee to handle that plaintife subiect more feriously.

Vext with discredit (Gabriel) I neuer was, as thou hast beene euer since *Familiaritas peperit contemptū*, thy familiar epistles brought thee into contempt.

Though I haue been pincht with want (as who is not one time or another, *Pierce Pennilessse*) yet my muse neuer wept for want of maintenance as thine did in *Musarum lachrimæ*, that was miserably flouted at in M. *Winkfields* Comœdie of *Pedantius* in Trinitie Colledge.

How am I tormented with other mens felicitie, otherwise thā saying, I know a Cobler that was worth five hundred pound, an hostler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispend forty pound yearely by his land, a Carman that had whipt a thousand pound out of his horse taile; if I had likewise reckond vp a ropemaker, that by tormenting of heme, & going backward (which the Deuill would nere doe) had turnd as many Mill sixpences ouer the thumbe, as kept three of his sonnes at Cambridge a long time, & that which is more, three proud sonnes, that when they met the

hangman (their Fathers best chapman) would scarce put of their hats to him, why then thou shouldst haue had some colour of quarell: thy accusatiō might iustly haue enterd his title *pro aris et focis*, whereas now it is friuolous and forcelesse.

The /sharpest wits, I perceiue, haue none of the best memories: if they had, thou wouldst nere haue toucht mee with tormenting my selfe with other mens felicitie; for how didst thou torment thyselfe with other mens felicitie when in the 28 page of thy first tome of Epistles, thou exclaimst, *that in no age so little was so much made of, nothing aduaunst to be something, Numbers made of Ciphars*, that is, by interpretatiō, all those that were aduaunst either in the Court or commonwealth at that time, had little to commend them, nothing in account worthy preferment, but were meere meacocks & Ciphars in comparison of thy excellent out-cast selfe that liu'dst in Cambridge vnmounted.

Hang thee, hang thee, thou common coofener of curteous readers, thou grosse shifter for shitten tapsterly iests, haue I imitated Tarltons *play of the seauen deadly sinnes in my plot of Pierce Penileffe*? whom hast thou not imitated then in the course of thy booke? thou hast borrowed aboue twenty phrases and epithites from mee, which in sober sadnesse thou makst vse of as thy owne, when thou wouldst exhort more effectuall.

Is it lawfull but for one preacher to preach of the ten commandements? hath none writ of the fiue senses but *Aristotle*? was finne so vtterly abolished with *Tarltons* play of the seuen deadly sins, that ther could be nothing said *supra* of that argument?

Canst thou exemplifie vnto mee (thou impotent moate-catching carper) one minnum of the particular deuce of his play that I purloind? There be manie men of one name that are nothing a kindred. Is there any further distribution of sins, not shadowed vnder these 7 large spreading branches of iniquity, on which a man may worke, and not tread on *Tarletons* heeles? / If not, what blemish is it to *Pierce Pennileffe* to begin where the Stage doth ende, to build vertue a Church on that foundation that the Deuill built his Chappell?

Gabriell, if there be anie witte or industrie in thee, now I will dare it to the vttermoſt: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it and answere it. Take truths part, and I wil proue truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dūg-voiding mouth.

Diuinitie I except, which admits no dalliance: but in any other art or profession, of which I am not yet free, and thou shalt challenge me to trie maistris in, Ile bind my selfe Prentise too, and studie throughly, though it neuer stand mee in

any other stead while I liue, but to make one reply, only because I wil haue the last word of thee.

I would count it the greateft punishment that *In speech* could lay vpon mee, to be bound to studie the Danish tongue, which is able to make any Englishman haue the mumpes in his mouth, that shall but plunge through one full point of it, yet the Danish tongue, or any Turks, or hogs or dogs tongue whatsoeuer, would I learne rather than bee put downe by such a ribauldry *Don Diego* as thou art.

Heigh drawer, fill vs a fresh quart of *new-found phrases*, since *Gabriell* saies we borrow all our eloquence from Tauerns: but let it be of the mighty *Burdeaux* grape, pure *vino de monte*, I coniure thee, by the same token that *the Devils dauncing schoole in the bottome of a mans purse that is emptie*, hath beene a gray-beard Prouerbe two hundred yeares before *Tarlton* was borne: Ergo, *no gramercy*, Dicke *Tarlton*. But *the summe of summes is this*, I drinke to you, M. *Gabriell*, on / that condition, that you shall not excruciate your braine to be conceited, and haue no wit.

Since we are here, on our prating bench in a close roome, and that there is none in company but you, my approoued good friends, *four Letters*

and certain Sonnets, your Pages, I will rehearse vnto you some part of the Methode of my demeanour in *Pierce Pennileffe*.

First, in so much as the principall scope of it is a most liuelie anatomie of sinne, the diuell is made speciall superuisor of it, to him it is dedicated: as if a man shoulde compile a curious examined discouerie of whoredome, and dedicate it to the quarter Maisters of Bridewell, because they are best able to punish it.

Wherefore as there is no fire without some smoke, no complaint without some precedent cause of agreeuance, I introduce a discontented Scholler vnder the person of *Pierce Pennileffe*, tragicallie exclaiming vpon his partial-eid fortune, that kept an Almes boxe of compassion in store for euery one but himselfe. He tels how he tost his imagination like a dogge in a blanket, searcht euerie corner of the house of Charitie, to see if he could light on any that would set a new nappe of an old threedbare Cloake: but, like him that hauing a letter to deliuer to a Scottish Lorde, when hee came to his house to enquire for him, found no bodie at home but an ape that sate in the Porch and made mops and mows at him; so he, deliuering his vnperufde papers in Powles Churchyard, the first that took them vp was the Ape *Gabriel*, who made mops and mows at them,

beslaueing the outside of them a little, but could not enter into the contents, which was an ase beyonde his vnderstanding.

With / the first and second leafe hee plaies verie pretilie, and in ordinarie termes of extenuating, verdicts *Pierce Pennileffe* for a *Grammar Schoole* wit; saies *his Margine is as deeplie learnd as Fauſte præcor gelida*, that *his Muse ſobbeth and groneth verie piteouſlie*, bids him not cast himself headlong into the horrible gulph of desperation, comes ouer him that hee is a creature of wonderfull hope, as his own inspired courage diuinely ſuggeſteth, wils him to inchaunt some magnificent *Mecenas*, to honour himſelfe in honouring him, with a hundred ſuch grace-wanting Ironies, cutte out againſt the woll, that woulde ieopard the beſt ioint of *Poetica Licentia* to procure laughter, when there crinckled crabbed countenance (the verie reſemblance of a fodden dogges face) hath ſworne it woulde neuer conſent thereunto.

Not the moſt exquisite thing that is, but the Couſel Table Aſſe, Richard Clarke, may ſo Carterly deride.

Euerie milke-maide can gird with Iſt true? How ſaie you lo? who would haue thought it? Good Beare, bite not? A man is a man, though hee hath but a hoſe on his head.

No ſuch light paiment, *Gabriel*, haſt thou at my

hands: I tell thee where, when, and how thou shewdft thy felfe a Dunfuall.

Onely externall defects thou cafts in my difh: nothing internall in thee, but I prooue that it is altogether excrementall.

A fewe Elegiacall verfes of mine thou pluckeft in pieces moft ruthfullie, and quotes them againft mee as advantageable, together with fome difmembred Margine notes, but all is inke caft away, you recouer no cofts and charges. With one minutes studie Ile diftroie more, than thou art able to build in ten daies.

Squeife / thy hart into thy inkehorne, and it fhall but congeal into clodderd garbage of confutatiō, thy foule hath no effects of a foule, thou canft not fprinkle it into a fentence, & make euerie line leape like a cup of neat wine new powred out, as an Orator muft doe that lies aright in wait for mens affections.

Whome haft thou wonne to hate mee by light crawling ouer my Text like a Cankerworme?

Some superficial flime of poison haft thou driueld from thy pen in thy shallow footed fliding through my *Supplication*, which one pen ful of repurified inke will exceffiuelie wash out. Shall I informe thee (that vnfruitfullie endeuorft to informe authoritie againft me) why I infixd thofe Poeticall latine margēt notes to fome fewe pages in the beginning

of *Pierce Pennileffe*? I did it to explaine to such expected spiefaults as thou art, that it was no vncouth abhorrencie from the custome of former writers, for a man openly to bewaile his vnderferued destenie.

In the vncafsing of thy brother *Richard*, I calculated the Natiuitie of the *Astrological Discourse*: I apparentlie suggested what a lewd piece of Prophecie it was: I registred the infinite scorne that the whole Realme entertaind it with, the Adages that ran vpon it, *Tarltons* and *Eldertons nigrum THETA* fet to it, yet wilt thou, that art the sonne and heire to shamelesse impudence, the vnlineall vsurper of iudgement from all his true owners, the HOYDEN and pointing stock recreation of Trinitie hall, *Vanitas vanitatis & omnia vanitas*, inuest that in the higheft throne of Art and Schollerfhip, which a scrutinie of so manie millions of wel discerning condemnations hath concluded to be viler than newesmungrie, & that which is vilest of all, no lesse vile than thy Epistles.

Most / voices, most voices, most voices; who is on my side who? Whether is the *Astrological Discourse* a better booke than *Pierce Pennileffe*? Gabriel hangtelow saies it is: I am the Defendant, and denie it, and yet I doe not ouercull my owne workes: His assertion he countermures him thus:

Pierce Pennileffe is a man better acquainted with

the Diuels of hell than the Starres of Heauen: Ergo, the Astrologicall Discourse is better than the notorious diabolicall discourse of Pierce Pennileffe.

Once againe I denie his Argument to bee of lawfull age. *Pierce Pennileffe* is a better Star-munger than a Diuelmunger, which needeth no other FOR to corroberate it but this, that my yea, at all times, is as good as his nay.

How is the *Supplication* a diabolicall Discourse, otherwife than as it intreats of the diuerse natures and properties of Diuils and spirits? in that far fetcht sense may the famous *defensatiue against supposed Prophecies*, and *the Discoverie of Witchcraft* be called notorious Diabolicall discourses, as well as the *Supplication*, for they also intreate of the illusions and fundrie operations of spirits: Likewise may I say that those his foure Letters nowe on their triall, are foure notorious lowfie Discourses, because they lyingly discourse little else faue *Greenes* lowfie estate before his death.

M. *Churchyard*, our old quarrel is renued, when nothing else can bee fastned on mee: this Letter leapper vpbraideth mee with *crying you mercie*: I cannot tell, but I think you will haue a saying to him for it. Ther's no reason that such a one as he should presume to intermeddle in your matters, it cannot be done with any intent but to stirre mee vp to write against you afresh, / which nothing

vnder heau'n shall draw mee to doe. I love you vnfaignedly, and admire your aged Muse, that may well be grand-mother to our grandeloquentest Poets at this present :

Sanctum & venerabile vetus omne Poema.

Shores wife is yong, though you be stept in yeares, in her shall you liue when you are dead.

For that vnadvised indammagement I haue done you heretofore, Ile be your champion henceforward against any that dare write against you. Onely as euer you would light vpon a good cuppe of old sacke when you are most drie, pocket not vp this flie abuse at a rakehell rampalions hands, one that, when an iniurie is deepe buried in the graue of obliuion, shall seeke to digge it vp againe, recall that into mens memories which was consumed and forgotten.

Whoreson Ninihammer, that wilt assault a man & haue no stronger weapons.

The Italian faith, a man must not take knowledge of iniurie till he be able to reuenge it.

Nay but, in plaine good fellowship, art thou so innocent & vnconceiuing that thou shouldst ere hope to dash mee quite out of request by telling mee *of the Counter, and my hostesse Penia?*

I yeeld that I haue dealt vpon spare commodities of wine and capons in my daies, I haue

fung *George Gascoignes* Counter-tenor ; what then? Wilt thou peremptorily define that it is a place where no honest man, or Gentleman of credit, euer came?

Heare what I say : a Gentleman is neuer throughly entred into credit till he hath beene there ; & that Poet, or nouice, be hee what he will, ought to suspect his wit, and remaine halfe in doubt that it is not authentically, till it hath beene seene and allowd in vnthrifts / confistory.

Grande doloris ingenium. Let fooles dwell in no stronger houses than their Fathers built them, but I protest I should neuer haue writ passion well, or beene a peece of a Poet, if I had not arriu'd in those quarters.

Trace the gallantest youthes and brauest reuellers about Towne in all the by-paths of their expence, & you shall vnfallibly finde, that once in their life time they haue visited that melancholy habitation.

Come, come : if you will goe to the sound truth of it, there is no place of the earth like it, to make a man wife.

Cambridge and Oxford may stande vnder the elbowe of it.

I vow if I had a sonne, I would sooner send him to one of the Counters to learne lawe, than to the Innes of Court or Chauncery.

My hostesse Penia, thats a bugges word : I pry

thee what Morrall haft thou vnder it? I will depofe, if thou wilt, that till now I neuer heard of anie fuch Englifh name.

There is a certaine thing cald *christian veritie*, & another hight *common fenfe*, and a third cleapt *humilitie*: they are more requifite and neceffary for thee than *modestie or discretion for mee and my companions*, of which thou fhouldft vnderftand, we are fo well provided that we can lend thee and thy brother *Richard* a great deale, and yet keepe more than wee fhall haue need of for ourfelues.

Wilt thou be fo hardy and iron-vifaged to gain-fay that thy brother Vicars Batchlours hood was not turnd ouer his eares for abufing of *Aristotle*? I know thou haft more grace than fo, thou doft not contradict / it flatly, but flubbers it ouer faintly, and comes to recapitulate, not confute fome of the phrafes I vfde in the vnhandfoming of his diuinitifhip.

I my felfe, in the fame order of difgracing thou fingles them foorth, will haue them vp againe, and fee if thou, or anie man, can abfurdifie the worft of them.

I fay, and will make it good that in the *Aftrologicall Difcourfe* thy brother (as if hee had lately caft the heau'ns water, or beene at the anatomizing of the skies intrailles in Surgeons hall) prophesiety of fuch Strange wonders to

ensue from the starres distemperature, and the vnusuall adulterie of plannets, as none but hee that is hatwd to those celestiaall bodiēs, could euer descry.

This too I will ratifie for truthable & legible English, that his Astronomy broke his day with his creditors, and Saturne & Iupiter prou'd honest men than all the world tooke them for.

That the whole Uniuersitie hist at him, Tarlton at the Theater made ieauses of him, and Elderton consumed his ale crammed nose to nothing, in heare-baiting him with whole hundels of Ballads.

All this he barely repeates without any disprouement or denudation at all, as if it were so lame in it selfe that it would adnihilate it selfe with the onelie rehearfall of it.

For the gentilitie of the *Nashes* (though it might seeme a humor borrowed from thee to bragge of it) yet some of vs who neuer sought into it til of late, can proue the extancy of our auncestors before there was ever a ropemaker in England. Wee can vaunt larger petigrees than patrimonies, yet of such extrinsecall things, common to tenne thousand calues and oxen, would I not willingly vaunt, only it hath pleased M. Printer, both in this booke and *Pierce Penileffe*, to intaile /a vaine

title to my name, which I care not for, without my consent or priuities I here auouch.

But on the gentilitie of T. N. his beard, the maister Butler of Pembroke hall, still I will stand to the death; for it is the very prince Elector of peaks, a beard that I cannot bee perswaded but was the Emperour *Dionisius* his, surnamed the Tyrant, when hee playde the schoolemaister in Corinth.

Gabriell, thou hast a prety polwigge sparrows taylor peake, yet maist thou not compare with his: thy Father, for all by thy owne confession *hee makes haire*, had neuer the art to twilt vp such a grim triangle of haire as that.

Be not offended, honest T. N., that I am thus bold with thee, for I affect thee for the names sake, as much as any one man can do another, and know thee to be a fine fellow, and fit to discharge a farre higher calling than that wherein thou liu'st.

What more stufte lurketh behind in this letter to be distributed into shop-dust?

Pierce Pennileffe is as childish and garish a booke as euer came in print: when he talks of the sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, he saies, it is monstrous and absurd, and not to bee sufferd in a Christian congregatiō; that Richard hath scumd ouer the schoolmen, and of the froth of their folly made a dish of Diuinitie brewelle, which the Dogs would not eate.

If he saide so (as hee did) and can proue it (as hee hath done) by Sainte *Lubecke*, then *The Lambe of God* is as childish and garish stufte as euer came in print, indeede.

I, but how doth *Pierce Pennileffe* expiate the coinquination of these obiections?

Richard, whom (*because hee is his brother, he therefore censures more curious and rigorous, in calling him M. H. than hee would haue done otherwise*) red the *Philosophie Lecture in Cambridge* with good liking and singular commendation, when *A per se a* was not so much as *Idoneus auditor ciuilis scientiæ, Ergo, the Lambe of God* beares a better Fleece than hee giues out it doth.

A per se a is improoued in nothing since, excepting his old *Flores Poetarum* and *Tarletons surmounting rethorique, with a little euphuisme and Greeneffe* inough.

Gabriel reports him to the fauourablest opinion of those that know *A per se a* his *Prefaces, rimes, and the very timpanie of his Tarltonizing wit, his Supplication to the Diuel.*

Quiet your selues a litle, my Maisters, and you shal see me disperse all those cloudes well inough. That *Richard* red the *Philosophie Lecture at Cambridge*, I doe not withstand, but how?

Verie Lentenlie and scantlie, (farre bee it wee shuld slander him so much as his brother *Richard*

hath done, to saie he read it with good liking and singlaritie). Credite mee, any that hath but a little refuse *Colloquium* Latine, to interfeame a Lecture with, and can saie but *Quapropter vos mei auditores*, may reade with equiualent commendation and liking.

I remember him woondrous well. In the chiefe pompe of that his false praise, I both heard him, and heard what was the vniuersall slender valuation of him.

There was eloquent *Maister Knox*, (a man whose losse all good learning can neuer sufficiently deplore) ; twas he and one *Maister Iones* of Trinitie Colledge, that, in my time, with more speciall approbation conuerst in those Readings.

Since / I haue heard of two rare yong men, M. *Meriton*, and another, that in supplying that place of succession haue surmounted all former mediocritie, and wonne themselues an euerlasting good name in the Vniuersitie.

These thou shouldst haue memoriz'd, if any, but thou art giuen to speake well of none but thy selfe and thy two brothers.

Thrice fruitfull S. Johns, how many hundred perfecter Schollers than the three brothers hast thou nurst at thy paps, that yet haue not shakte off obscuritie?

Mellifluous PLAYFERE, one of the chief props of

our aged & auntientest, & absoluteſt Vniuerſities preſent flourishing. Where doe thy ſupereminent gifts ſhine to themſelues, that the Court cannot bee acquainted with them?

Few ſuch men ſpeake out of Fames higheſt Pulpits, though out of her higheſt Pulpits ſpeake the pureſt of all ſpeakers.

Let me adde one word, and let it not bee thought derogatorie to anie. I cannot bethinke mee of two in England in all things comparable to him for his time. Seldome haue I beheld ſo pregnant a pleaſaunt wit coupled with a memorie of ſuch huge incomprehenſible receipt, deepe reading and delight, better mixt than in his Sermons.

Sed quorſum hæc, how doe theſe digreſſions linke in without *ſubiectum circa quod*?

Flaunting *Richard* and his Philoſophie Lecture, was vnder our fingers euen now, howſoeuer wee haue loſt him. Hold the candle, and you ſhall ſee me caſt a figure for him extempore: Oh hoh, I haue founde him without any further ſeeking. Giue me your eares: *Io / Pæan*, God faue them, they are long ones.

Now, betweene you and me declare, as if you were at ſhrift, whether you be not a ſuperlatiue blocke for al you readd the Philoſophie Lecture at Cambridge: Brieflie, brieflie: let mee not ſtand all daie about you.

His conscience accuseth him, hee is stroke starke dumbe ; onely by signes he craues to bee admitted *in forma pauperis*, that we should let him passe for a pore fellow, and he will sell his birthright in learning, with *Esau*, for a messe of porridge.

Curæ leues loquuntur : he hath but a little cure to look too. *Maiores stupent*, more liuing would make him studie more.

For this once wee dispence with you, because you looke so penitentlie on it, but let me not catch you selling any more such twife sodden sawduft diuinitie as *the Lambe of God and his enemies*, for if I do, Ile make a dearth of paper in Pater-noster-rowe (such as was not this seauen yeare) onelie with writing against thee.

A per se a can doe it : tempt not his clemencie too much. *A per se a ?*

Passion of God, howe came I by that name? My godfather *Gabriel* gaue it mee, and I must not refuse it. Nor if you were priuie whence it came would you hold it worthie to be refused ; for before I had the reuerfion of it hee bestow'd it on a Nobleman, whose new fashiond apparell and *Tuscanish gestures, cringing side necke, eies glancing, fisnomie smerking* hauing described to the full, he concludes with this verse :

*Euerie inch A per se a his termes and braueries
in print.*

Hold you your peace *Nashe*: that was before you were *Idoneus auditor ciuilibus scientiæ*. It may bee so, for thou wert a Libeller before I was borne. Yet vnder / correction bee it spoken, I haue come to the schooles and purg'd rheume in my time, when your brother was Philosophie Lecturer; he wanted no *supplous pedū*, to spend away his houre, that I could help him with.

What since I am improued you partly haue prooued to your cost; and may doe more at large, if God send vs more leysure.

As for *Flores Poetarum*, they are flowers that yet I neuer smelt too. Ile pawne my hand to a halfe-penny, I haue read more good Poets thorough than thou euer hardst of.

The floures of your *Foure Letters* it may be I haue ouerlookt more narrowlie, and done my best deuoire to assemble them together into patheticall poesie, which I will here present to Maister Orator *Edge* for a Newyeares gift, leauing them to his wordie discretion to be censured, whether they be currant in inkehornisme or no.

Conscius mind: canicular tales: egregious an argument: when as *egregious* is neuer vsed in english but in the extreame ill part. *Ingenuitie: Iouiall mind: valarous Authors: inckehorne aduentures: nckehorne pads: putatiue opinions: putatiue artists: energeticall persuasions: Rascallitie: materiallitie:*

artificiallitie: Fantasticallitie: diuine Entelechy: loud Mentery: deceitfull perfidy: addiēed to Theory: the worlds great Incendiarie: sirenized furies: scue-raigntie immense: abundant Cauteles: cautelous and aduentrous: cordiall liquor: Catilinarie and Phillipicks: perfunctorie discourses: Davids sweetnes olimpique: the Idee high and deepe Abisse of excellence: The only Vnicorne of the Muses: the Aretenish mountaine of huge exaggerations: The gracious law of Amnesty: amicable termes: amicable end: | Effectuate: addoulce his melodie: Magy poli-mechany: extensiuely employed: precious Traynment: Nouellets: Notorietie negotiation: mechanician.

Nor are these all, for euerie third line hath some of this ouer-rackt absonisme. Nor do I altogether scum off all these as the newe ingendred some of the English, but allowe some of them for a neede to fill vp a verse; as *Traynment*, and one or two wordes more, which the libertie of prose might well haue spar'd. In a verse, when a worde of three fillables cannot thrust in but sidelings, to ioynt him euen, we are oftentimes faine to borrowe some lesser quarry of elocution from the Latine, alwaies retaining this for a principle, that a leake of indefinence, as a leake in a shippe, must needly bee stopt with what matter soeuer.

Chaucers authoritie, I am certaine, shalbe al-leadgd against me for a many of these balductums.

Had *Chaucer* liu'd to this age, I am verily perfwaded hee would haue discarded the tone halfe of the harsher fort of them.

They were the Oouse which ouerflowing barbarisme, withdrawne to her Scottish Northren chanell, had left behind her. Art, like yong graffe in the spring of *Chaucers* flourishing, was glad to peepe vp through any slime of corruption, to be beholding to she car'd not whome for apparaile, traouailing in those colde countries. There is no reason that shee, a banisht Queene into this barraine foile, hauing monarchizd it so long amongst the Greeks and Romanes, should (although warres furie had humbled her to some extremitie) still be constrained, when she hath recouerd her state, to weare the robes of aduersitie, iet it in her old rags, when she is wedded to new prosperitie.

Vtere / moribus præteritis, saith Caius Cæsar in Aulus Gellius, loquere verbis præsentibus.

Thou art mineemie, *Gabriell*, and, that which is more, a contemptible vnder-footeemie, or else I would teach thy old *Trewantship* the true vse of words, as also how more inclinable verse is than prose, to dance after the horrizonant pipe of inueterate antiquitie.

It is no matter, since thou hast brought godly instruction out of loue with thee, vse thy own

destruction, raigne sole Emperour of inkehornisme : I wish vnto thee all superabundant increase of the singlar gifts of absurditie, and vaine glory: from this time forth for euer, euer, euer, euermore maist thou be canonized as the *Nonparreille* of impious epistlers, the short shredder out of sandy sentences without lime, as *Quintillian* tearmed *Seneca* all lime, and no fande, all matter and no circumstance ; the factor for the Fairies and night Vrchins, in supplanting and setting aside the true children of the English, and suborning inkehorne changlings in their steade, the galemafrier of all stiles in one standish, as imitating euerie one, & hauing no seperate forme of writing of thy owne ; and to conclude, the onely feather-driuer of phrases, and putter of a good word to it when thou hast once got it, that is betwixt this and the Alpes. So bee it worlde without ende. Chroniclers heare my praiers: good Maister *Stowe*, be not vnmindfull of him.

Thats well remembred, now I talke of Chroniclers: I founde the Astrological discourfe the other night in the Chronicle. *Gabriell* will outface vs, it is a worke of such deepe arte & iudgement, when it is expressly past vnder record for a coofening prognostication. The wordes are these, though somewhat abbrevi / ated, for he makes a long circumlocution of it.

In the yeare 1583, by meanes of an Astrologicall discourse vppon the great and notable coniunction of Saturne and Iupiter, the common sort of people were almost driu'n out of their wits, and knew not what to doe; but when no such thing hapned, they fell to their former securitie, and condemned the discourser of extreame madnesse and follie.

Ipssissima sunt Aristotelis verba, they are the verie words of *Iohn Tell-troth*, in the 1357 folio of the last edition of the great Chronicle of England.

Mehercule quidem, if it be so taken vp, *Pierce Pennilessse* may cast his cappe after it for euer ouertaking it. But some thing euen now, *Gabriell*, thou wert girding against my *præfaces and rimes*, and the *timpanie of my Tarltonizing wit*.

Well, these be your words, *præfaces and rimes*:
Apply to let me studie a little, *præfaces and rimes*.
Mas. Martin. *Minime verò, si ais nego*. I neuer printed rime in my life, but those verses in the beginning of *Pierce Pennilessse*, though you haue set foorth

*The stories quaint of manie a doutie flie,
 That read a lecture to the ventrous elfe.*

And so forth as followeth in chambling rowe.

Præfaces two, or a paire of *Epistles*, I will receyue into the protection of my parentage: out of both which, sucke out one *solæcisme*, or mishapen English word, if thou canst for thy guts.

Wherein haue I borrowed from *Greene* or *Tarlton*, that I should thanke them for all I haue? Is my stile like *Greenes*, or my ieafts like *Tarltons*?

Do I talke of any counterfeit birds, or hearbs, or ftones, or rake vp any new-found poetry from vnder the wals of *Troy*? If I do, trip mee with it; but I doe not, therefore Ile bee / so fauzy as trip you with the grand lie. Ware stumbling of whetstones in the darke there my maifters.

This I will proudly boaft (yet am I nothing a kindred to the three brothers) that the vaine which I haue (be it a *median* vaine, or a madde man) is of my own begetting, and cals no man father in England but my felfe, neyther *Euphues*, nor *Tarlton*, nor *Greene*.

Not *Tarlton* nor *Greene* but haue beene contented to let my fimple iudgement ouerrule them in fome matters of wit. *Euphues* I readd when I was a little ape in Cambridge, and I then thought it was *Ipse ille*: it may be excellent good ftill, for ought I know, for I lookt not on it this ten yeare: but to imitate it I abhorre, otherwife than it imitates *Plutarch*, *Ouid* and the choicest Latine Authors.

If you be aduifde, I tooke *shortest vowels and longest mutes* in the beginning of my booke, as fufpicious of being accessarie to the making of a Sonnet wherto Maifter *Christopher Birds* name is

ſet, there I ſaide that you mute forth many ſuch phraſes in the courſe of your booke, which I would point at as I paſt by: Heere I am as good as my word, for I note that thou beeing afraide of beraying thy ſelfe with writing, *wouldeſt faine bee a mute*, when it is too late to repent. Againe, thou reuieſt on vs and ſaiſt *that mutes are courſed and vowels haunted*. Thou art no mute, yet ſhalt thou be haunted and courſed to the full. I will neuer leaue thee as long as I am able to liſt a pen.

Whether I ſeeke to bee counted a terrible bul-begger or no, Ile baite thee worſe than a bull, ſo that thou ſhalt deſire ſome body on thy knees to helpe thee with letters of commendation to *Bull*, the hangman, that he may diſpatch thee out of the way before / more affliction come vpon thee.

All the inuectiue and ſatiricall ſpirits ſhall then bee thy familiars, as the furies in hell are the familiars of ſinfull ghoſts, to follow them and torment them without intermiſſion: thou ſhalt bee double girt with girds, and ſcoft at, till thoſe that ſtand by do nothing but cough with laughing.

Thou ſaiſt I profeſſe the art of railing: thou ſhalt not ſay ſo in vaine, for, if there bee any art or depth in it more than *Aretine* or *Agrippa* haue diſcouered or diu'd into, looke that I will found it and ſearch it to the vttermoſt, but ere I haue done

with thee ile leaue thee the miserableſt creature that the funne euer ſawe.

There is no kind of peaceable pleaſure in poetrie, but I can draw equally in the ſame yoke with the haughtieſt of thoſe foule-mouthd backbiters that ſay I can do nothing but raile.

I haue written in all ſorts of humors priuately, I am perſwaded more than any yoong man of my age in England.

The weather is cold, and I am wearie with confuting: the remainder of the colde contents of this Epiftle be theſe.

He enuiouſly indeuors, ſince he cannot reuenge himſelfe, to incenſe men of high calling againſt me, and wold inforce it into their opinions, that whatſoeuer is ſpoke in *Pierce Pennileſſe* concerning *Pefants, Clownes & hipercriticall hot-ſpurs, Midaffeſſes, Buckram Giants, & the mightie Prince of Darkneſſe*, is meant of them: let him proue it, or bring the man to my face to whome I euer made any vndutiefull expoſition of it. I am to be my own interpreter in this firſt caſe: I ſay, in *Pierce Pennileſſe* I haue ſet downe nothing but that which I / haue had my preſident for, in forraine writers, nor had I the leaſt alluſion to any man ſet aboue mee in degree, but onely glanc't at vice generallie.

The tale of the Beare and the Foxe, how euer it may ſet fooles heads a worke a farre off, yet I

had no concealed ende in it, but in the one to describe the right nature of a bloudthirsty tyrant, whose indefinite appetite all the pleasures in the earth haue no power to bound in goodnes, but he must seeke a new felicitie in varietie of cruelty, and destroying all other mens prosperitie; for the other, to figure an hypocrite; let it be *Martin*, if you will, or some old dog that bites forer than hee, who secretlie goes and seduceth country Swaines.

Makes them beleue that honny which their bees brought forth was poysonous and corrupt.

That they may buy honny cheaper than by being at such charges in keeping bees.

That is not necessary they should haue such stately hiues, or lie sucking at such precious honnicombs.

If this (which is nothing else but to swim with the streame) be to tell tales as shrewdly as mother *Hubbard*, it should seeme mother *Hubbard* is no great shrewe, howeuer thou, treading on her heeles so oft, shee may bee tempted beyonde her ten commandements.

A litle before this, the foresaid fanaticall *Phobeter*, *geremumble*, *tirleriwhisco*, or what you will, cald forth the biggest gunshot of my thundering tearmes, steept in *Aqua fortis* and gunpowder, to come and trie them selues on his paper Target.

But that it is no credite, *Galpogas*, to discharge

a Cannon against a lowse, thou shouldst not call in vaine: thou shouldst heare Tom a Lincolne roare with / a witnes. Woe worth the daie & the yeare when thou hearest him. I feareblast thee nowe but with the winde of my weapon. With the waft of my words I lay waft all the feeble fortifications of thy wit. Shewe mee the Vniuersities hand and seale that thou art a Doctour sealed and deliuered in the presence of a whole Commensement, and Ile present thee with my whole artillerie store of eloquence.

A bots on thee for mee for a lumpish, leaden heeld letter dawber, my stile, with treading on thy clammie steps, is growne as heauie gated, as if I were bound to an Aldermans pace, with the irons at Newgate cald the widows Almes.

Ere I was chained to thee thus by the necke, I was as light as the Poet *Accius*, who was so lowe and so slender, that hee was faine to put lead in his shooes for feare the winde shoulde blowe him into another Countrie.

Those that catch Leopards set cups of wine before them: those that will winne liking and grace of the readers must set before them continually that which shall cheare them and reuiue them.

Gabriell, thou hast not done so, thou canst not doe so, therefore thy works neither haue, nor can any way hinder mee, nor benefit the Printer.

Euen in the packing vp of my booke, a hot ague hath mee by the backe. Maugre sicknesse worst, a leane arme put out of the bed shall grind and pass euerie crum of thy booke into pin-duft.

The next peece of seruice thou dost against *Pierce Pennilesse* is naming of him *wofull poueretto*, and pleasant supposing thou puldst him by the ragged fleue. Then matchest thou thy selfe to *Vlisses*, and him to *Irus*: *Irrita sunt hæc omnia*: it is a fleuelesse ieast. I haue / beflie'd thee already for it: it toucheth the body and not the minde. Besides, I was neuer altogether *Peter Poueretto*, vtterly throwne downe, desperately seperated from all means of releeuing my selfe, since I knew how to separate a knaue from an honest man, or throw my cloake ouer my nose, when I sailed by the Counters.

The ragged cognizance on the fleue, I may say to thee, carried meate in the mouth when time was: doe not dispraise it yet, for it hath many high partakers. *Quæ sequuntur hujusmodi sunt.*

Thou turmoilst thy *pia mater* to proue base births better than the offspring of many discents, because thou art a mushrumpe sprung vp in one night, a feely mouse begotten on a moulehill, that wouldst fayne pearch thy selfe on the mountaines, when thy legges are too short to ouercome such a long iourney of glorie.

My margin note, *Meritis expendite causam*, thou wouldst rather than any thing wrest to an enditment of arrogance, & so branch mee into thy tiptoe stocke. I cannot see how thou canst compass it: For though I had them weigh the cause by deserts, yet I did not assume too much to my owne deserts, when I expostulated, why Coblers, Hostlers and Carmen should be worth so much, and I, a scholler and a good fellow, a begger. How thou hast arrogated to thy selfe more than *Lucifer*, or any *Miles gloriosus* in the worlde would doe, I haue already noted at large in his due place and order. If thou bestowst any curtesie on mee, and I do not requite it, then call mee cut, and say I was brought vp at Hoggenorton, where pigges play on the Organs.

Wert thou well acquainted with me, thou shouldst perceive that I am very franke where I take, & send away none empty-handed that giue mee but halfe an ill worde.

It is a good signe of grace in thee, that thou confessest *thou hast offences enough of thy owne to answer, though thou beest not chargd with thy Fathers*. Once in thy life thou speakst true yet. I beleue thee and pittie thee. God make thee a good man, for thou hast bene a wilde youth hitherto.

Thy Hexameter verses, or thy hue and crie

after a *person as cleare as Christall*, I do not so deeply commend, for al *Maister Spencer long since imbraft it with an ouer-louing sonnet.*

Why should friends dissemble one with another? they are very vgly and artlesse. You will neuer leaue your olde trickes of drawing *M. Spencer* into euerie pybald thing you do. If euer he praifd thee, it was becaufe he had pickt a fine vaine foole out of thee, and he would keepe thee still a foole, by flattring thee, til such time as he had brought thee into that extreame loue with thy selfe, that thou shouldst run mad with the conceit, and so be scorned of all men.

Yet yet, *Gabriell*, are not we set *non plus*: thy *roister-doisterdome* hath not dasht vs out of countenance. If anie man *use boistrous horse play, or bee beholding to Carters Logique*, it is thy selfe; for with none but clownish and roynish ieafts dost thou rush vppon vs, and keepst such a *flurting and a flinging* in euerie leafe, as if thou wert the onely reasty iade in a country.

Skolding, thou saiest, is the language of shrewes, railing the stile of rakehels: what concludst thou from thence? Do I scold? Do I raile?

Scolding & railing is loud miscalling and reiling one another without wit, speaking euerie thing a man knows / by his neighbour, though it bee neuer so contrary to all humanitie and good manners, and

would make the standers by almost perbrake to heare it. Such is thy inuectiue against *Greene*, where thou talkst of his lowlines, his surfeting, his beggerie and the mother of *Infortunatus* infirmities. If I scold, if I raile, I do but *cum ratione insanire*: *Tully*, *Ouid*, all the olde Poets, *Agrippa*, *Aretine*, and the rest are all scolds and railers, and by thy conclusion flat shrewes and rakehels: for I do no more than their examples do warrant mee.

The intoxicate spirit of grisly Euridice, I can tosse ouer as lightly to thee, as thou hast puft it to mee. My hart is præoccupied with better spirits, which haue left her no house-roume: thou hast no spirite, as it should appeare by thy writing: intertaine her and the spirit of the buttery out of hand, or thou wilt be beaten hand-smooth out of Bucklarsbury.

When I parted with thy brother in *Pierce Penniless* I left him to be tormented world without ende of our Poets and writers about London, for calling them piperly make-playes and make-bates, not doubting but they would driue him to this issue, that he should be constrained to goe to the chiefe beame of his benefice, and there beginning a lamètable speech, with *cur scripsi, cur perii*, ende with *Prauum praua decent, iuuat inconcessa voluptas*, & so with a trice, trusse vp his life in the string of his sauce-bell. Now heere thou thankst God thou art not so vncharitably bent to put so much

wit in a speech: like a Parson in Lancashire, that kneeld down on his knees in a zealous passion, and very hartily thankt God he neuer knew what that vile Antichristian Romish Popish Latine meant. Did I exhort inke and paper to pray that they might not bee troubled with /him any more? Inke and paper, if they bee true Protestants, will pray that they may not be contaminated any more with such abhomination of desolation, as the three brothers Apocripha pamphleting.

After all this foule weather ensueth a calme dilatation of others too forward harmefulnes, and thy owne backward irefulnesse: thats dispatcht; the court hath found it otherwise.

Then thou goest about to bribe mee to giue ouer this quarrell, and saist, if I will holde my peace, thou wilt bestowe more complements of rare amplification vpon mee, than euer thou bestowdft on Sir *Philip Sidney*, and gentle Maister *Spencer*.

Thou flatterst mee, and praifest mee.

To make mee a small seeming amendes for the iniuries thou hast done mee, thou reckonst mee vp amongst the deare louers and professed sonnes of the *Muses*, *Edmund Spencer*, *Abraham France*, *Thomas Watson*, *Samuell Daniell*.

With a hundred blessings, and many praiers, thou intreatst mee to loue thee.

Content thy selfe, I will not.

Thou protestst it was not my person thou mislikt (I am afraide thou wilt make mee thy Ingle) but my fierce running at Parson Richard, excusest mee by my youth, & promisest to cancell thy impertinent Pamphlet.

It were good hanging thee now, thou art in such a good mind ; yet for all this, a dogge will be a dogge, & returne to his vomit doe what a man can: thou must haue one squibbe more at the Deuils Orator, & his Dames Poet, or thy penne is not in cleane life. I will permit thee to fay what thou wilt, *to vnderlie*, (as thou desir'ft) *the verdict of Fame her selfe*, so I may lie about thee. LIE about thee, tell a greater lie than thou dost, no / man is able.

Thus O heauenly Muse, I thanke thee, for thou hast giu'n me the patience to trauel through the tedious wildernesse of this Gomorian Epistle. Not *Hercules*, when he cleansed the stables of *Ægeas*, vnder-tooke such a stinking vnsauorie exploit. By thy assistance through a whole region of golden lanes haue I journeied, & now am safely arriu'd at *not speedily dispatcht, but hastily bungled vp as you see*. Graunt that all such slow dispatchers & hastie bunglers, may haue a long time of reproach to repent them in, and not come abroad to corrupt the aire, & imposthume mens ears with their pan-pudding prose any more. So bee it, say all

English people after mee, that haue eares to heare or eies to reade.

Feci, feci, feci, had I my health, now I had leysure to be merry, for I haue almost washt my hands of the Doctour.

His own regenerate verses of *the jolly Fly, & Gibeline and Gwelph*, some peradventure may expect that I should answere. So I would if there were anie thing in them which I had not answered before, but there is nothing; if there were, hauing driuen his sword to his head, I respect not what he can do with his dagger. Onely I will looke vpon the last sonnet of M. *Spencers* to the right worshipfull Maister G. H., Doctour of the lawes: or it may so fall out that I will not looke vpon it too, because (*Gabriell*) though I vehemently suspect it to bee of thy owne doing, it is popt fourth vnder M. *Spencers* name, and his name is able to sanctifie any thing, though falsely ascribed to it.

The fourth letter of our Orators, to the same fauourable or indifferent reader, was a letter which this many a long summers day, I dare ieopard my maidenhead / had line hidden in his deske; for it is a shipmans hose, that will ferue any man as well as *Green* or mee.

To make short, in it, as fortie times before, he brides it and simpers out a crie, No, forsooth, God dild you hee would not, that hee would: None so

desirous of quiet as hee, good olde man, who with a pure intent of peace, first put fire to the flame that hath hedged him in.

He hath preuented Maister *Bunnie* of the second part of his treatise of *Pacification*; for like some craftie ringleader of rebellion, when hee hath stirred vp a dangerous commotion, and findes, by the too late examination of his forevnexamed defects in himselfe, that so sweet a roote will hardlie effect correspondent fruits, strait, in pollicie to get his pardon, hee strikes faile to the tempest of sedition, and is thrice as earnest in preaching pacification, obedience, and submission: so *Gabriel*, when he hath stird vp against me what tumults he can in stationers Shops, and left the quiuer of his enuie not an arrow vndrawne out, hee finds, by the audit of his ill consumed defectes, that he is not of force enough to hold out: wherefore in pollicie, to auoid further arrearages of infamie, hee tires the text of reconciliation out of breath, and hopeth by the intercession of *a cuppe of white wine and sugar, to be made friends with his fellow writers.*

It cannot choose but he must of necessitie be a very fore fellow, that is so familiar with white wine & sugar, for white wine, in a maner, is good for nothing but to wash sores in, and smudge vp withered beauty with. Well, for all hee would haue *Pierce* make no warres on him, he makes

warres on *Pierce Pennileffe*, he bebeggereth him again in this epistle verie bountifullie: / hee faies *that Lordes must take heede how they Lord it in his prefence.*

That the Asse is the onelie Author he alleadgeth.

That Greene is an Asse in print, and he a calfe in print.

That they are both chieftaines in licentiousnesse and that truth can saie the abhominable villanies of such base shifting companions, good for nothing but to cast away themselues, spoile their adherents, &c.

For my beggerie, let that trauell the countries: I haue saide more for it than a richer man would haue done, but that I take vppon me to Lord it ouer great Lords, thou art a most lewd tungd lurden to saie it.

Must they take heede how they Lord it in my prefence, what must they doe in thy prefence?

*That sitting like a looker on
Of this worlds stage, dost note with critique pen
The sharpe dislikes of each condition;
Ne fawnest for the fauour of the great,
Nor fearest foolish reprehension,
But freelie dost of what thee list intreate,
Like a great Lord of peerelesse libertie,
Lifting the good vp to high honours seate,
And th' euill damning euermore to die:
For life and death is in thy doomefull writing.*

Whereas thou saist the Assè, in a manner, is the only Author I alleadge, I must know how you define an Assè before I can tell how to answere you; for *Cornelius Agrippa* maketh all the Philosophers, Oratours, and Poets that euer were, Asses: and if so, you vnderstand that I alleadge no Author but the Assè; for [if] all Authors are Asses, why I am for you; if otherwise, thou art worfe than a *Cumane* Assè, to leape before thou lookst, and condemne a man without cause.

What Authors dost thou alleadge in thy booke? not /two but any Grammer Scholler might haue alleadgd.

There is not three kernels of more than common learning in all thy *Foure Letters*. Common learning? not common sence in some places.

Of force I must graunt that *Greene* came oftner in print than men of iudgement allowed off, but neuerthelesse he was a daintie slaue to content the taile of a Tearme, and stufte Seruing mens pockets.

An Assè, *Gabriel*, it is harde thou shouldst name him: for calling me Calfe, it breakes no square, but if I bee a calfe, it is in comparison of such an Oxe as thy selfe.

The chieftaines of licentiousnesse, and truth can say the abhominable villanies of such base foisting companions, good for nothing, &c. I am of the mind wee shall not digest this neither.

Anfwere me *succintè & expeditè*, what one period any way leaning to licentiousnes, canst thou produce in *Pierce Pennileffe*?

I talke of a great matter when I tell thee of a period, for I know two feuerall periods or full pointes, in this last epistle, at least fortie lines long a piece.

For the order of my life, it is as ciuil as a ciuil orange: I lurke in no corners, but conuerse in a house of credit, as well gouerned as any Colledge, where there bee more rare quallified men, and selected good Schollers than in any Noblemans house that I knowe in England.

If I had committed *such abhominable villanies, or were a base shifting companion*, it stoode not with my Lords honour to keepe me, but if thou hast saide it, & canst not proue it, what slandrous dishonor hast thou done him, to giue it out that he keepes *the committers of / abhominable villanies and base shifting companions*, when they are farre honefter than thy selfe.

If I were by thee, I would plucke thee by the beard, and spit in thy face, but I would dare thee, and vrge thee beyonde all excuse, to disclose and proue for thy heart bloud, what villanie or base shifting by mee thou canst. I defie all the worlde in that respect.

Because thou vsedst at Cambridge to shift for

thy Friday nights suppers, and cofen poore victuallers and pie-wiues of Doctours cheefe and puddinges, thou thinkest me one of the same religion too.

What *Greene* was, let some other answere for him as much as I haue done: I had no tuition ouer him: he might haue writ another *Galatæo* of manners, for his manners euerie time I came in his companie: I saw no such base shifting or abhominable villanie by him. Something there was which I haue heard, not seene, that hee had not that regarde to his credite in which had beene requisite he should.

What a *Calimunco* am I to plead for him, as though I were as neere him as his owne skinne. A thousande there bee that haue more reason to speake in his behalfe than I, who, since I first knew him about town, haue beene two yeares together and not seene him.

But Ile doe as much for any man, especially for a dead man, that cannot speake for himselfe. Let vs heare *how we are good for nothing but to cast awaie our selues, spoile our adherents, praie on our fauourers, dishonour our Patrons.* Haue I euer tooke any likelie course of casting away my selfe?

Whom canst thou name that kept me company, and reapt any discommoditie by mee? I can name

diuers good Gentlemen *that haue beene my adherents and / fauourers a long time.* Let them report howe I haue spoilde them, or praid on them, or put them to one pennie detriment since I first conformed with thē.

Haue an eie to the maine-chaunce, for no sooner shall they vnderstand what thou hast said by mee of them, but theyle goe neere to haue thee about the eares for this geare, one after another.

My Patrons, or anie that bind me to them by the least good turne, there is no man in England that is, or shall (for my small power) bee more thankefull vnto than I. Neuer was I vnthankefull vnto any, no, not to those of whome for deedes I receiued nothing but vnperformed deede promising words. It is an honor to be accusde, and not conuinft.

One of these months I shall challenge martirdome to my selfe, and writ large stories of the persecution of tongues. Troth I am as like to persecute as be persecuted. Let him take vp his Crosse and bleffe himselfe that crosseth mee, for I will crosse shinnes with him though euerie sentence of his were a thousande tunnes of discourfes, as *Gabriel* faith, euerie sentence of his is a discourfe. Quods, quods giue me my Text pen againe, for I haue a little more Text to launce.

The secretaries of art and nature, if it were not

for friuolous contentions, might bestead the commō-welth with manie puissant engins. As, for example, *Bacons* brafen nose, *Architas* wodden doue, dancing bals, fire breathing gourdes, artificiaall flies to hang in the aire by themselues, an egshell that shall run vp to the toppe of a speare.

Archimedes made a heau'n of brasse, but we haue nothing to do with olde brasse and iron.

Apollonius Regimontanus did manie pretie iugling tricks, but wee had rather drinke out of a glasse than / a Iugge: vse a little brittle wit of our owne, than borrow any miracle mettall of the Deuils.

Amongst all other stratagemes and puissant engins, what say you to *Mates* Pumpe in Cheapside, to pumpe ouer mutton and porridge into Fraunce? this colde weather our souldiors, I can tell you, haue need of it, and, poore field mise, they haue almost got the colicke and stone with eating of prouant.

Confider of it well, for it is better than all *Bacons*, *Architas*, *Archimedes*, *Apollonius* or *Regiomontanus* deuices; for *Gabriell*, that professeth all these, with all their helpe cannot make the bias bowle at *Saffron Walden* run downe the hill, when it is throwne down with the hardest hand that may bee, but it will turne vp the hill againe in spite of a mans teeth, and, that which is worst, giue no reason for it.

The Parrat and the Peacock haue leifure to reuiue and repolish their expired workes. You fpeake like a friend: wele liften to you when you haue repolished and expired your perfected degree. A Demy Doctor, what a fhame is it?

Beaufe your books do call for a litle more drinke, and a fewe more clothes when they are gone to bed, that is, when they lie dead, you thinke ours do fo too. No, no, we doe not vfe to clappe a coat ouer a ierkin, or thruft any of the children of our braine into their mothers wombe againe, & beget them a new after they are once borne. If it bee a horne booke at his firft conception, let it be a horne booke ftill, and turne not eat in the panne, conuert the Paternofter to a Primer, when it hath begd it felfe out at the elbowes vp and downe the cuntrey.

Thou didft thou knewft not what in eeking this thy fhort-wafted Pamphlet, iwis, as thou faift of thy felfe / *Thou art an old trewant, fitter to plaie the dumbe dogge with fome antients, than the hissing fnake.*

Who be thofe antient dumbe dogs? we fhall haue you a Martiniſt when all comes to all, beaufe you cannot thriue with the Ciuill Law, and that you may marry her for any thing you are a kindred to her: therefore you will compare *Whitegift and Cartwright*, white and blacke together, name the

highest gouernours of the Church without giuing them anie reuerence or titles of honour, imbrace anie religion which will be euen with the profession that fauors not you.

There is no baile or mainprife for it, but wee must haue you in the first peeping forth of the spring, preaching out of a Pulpit in the woods: you haue put on wolues raiment already, seduced manie simple people vnder the habit of a sheepe and *Wolfes* print. If you protest & lie any more, it is not your ending here like a sermon, that will make you bee reputed for a saint.

Readers, a decayed student, lately shipwrackt with *Si vales bene est*, hauing foure Lightors of Letters, cleane cast away on the rocks called the Bishop & his Clarks, desires you all to pray for him, and he will recommend you all to God the next sermon he penneth, or his brother *Richard*.

He hath a mind to pay euery man his owne, though hee hath sustained great losse in fight, *that which he cannot effect he beseecheth the Lord to accomplish, and euen to worke a miracle vpon the deafe.*

Lord if it be thy will, let him be an Assé still. Gentlemen, I haue no more to say to the Doctor dispose of the victorie as you please: shortly I will present you with something that shal be better than nothing, onely giue mee a gentle hire for my

durtie day labor, and I am your bounden Orator
for euer.

Son / netto.

Were there no warres, poore men should haue
no peace :

Vnceffant warres with waspes and droanes I crie :
Hee that begins, oft knows not how to cease,
They haue begun, Ile follow till I die.

Ile heare no truce, wrong gets no graue in mee,
Abuse pell mell encounter with abuse :

Write hee againe, Ile write eternally.

Who feedes reuenge hath found an endlesse Muse.

If death ere made his blacke dart of a pen,

My penne his speciall Baily shall becum :

Somewhat Ile be reputed of mongst men,

By striking of this duns or dead or dum.

Awaite the world the Tragedy of wrath :

What next I paint shall tread no common path.

Aut nunquam tentes aut perfice.

Tho. Nashe.

Obferuations for the Readers of this
Booke.

Item, whatfoeuer for the moft part is here in this booke in change of letter, is our aduerfaries owne Text, and vnbaried words, either in this his conuicted Foure Letters, or fome other fultie treatife, fet forth by him heretofore.

Then, that I am wrested and vtterly diuorced from my owne inuention, & conftained still still, before I am warme in any one vaine, to start away fodaynely, and follow him in his vanitie.

Finally, Printers haue many false kitches, which are thus to bee drawen vp.

In the fecond page of c for Baboune brother, reade Baboune his brother: in the 7 for allegorized & Abdias, reade allegorized Abdias: in the 8 for fet hand, reade, fet his hand: idem for headmen read headman. In the first of d for *liuor post quiescat*, reade *Liur post fata quiescat*: in the 5 for plaister of Doctourship, reade plaitrie or dawbing of Doctourship: in the 7 for insolent inckehorne worme, reade insolent incke worme: in the 2 of e for Affe in present, read Affe in presenti: in the 3 for bestow vpon, reade bestow vpon him: in the 5 for effect, reade efficacie. In the 4 of f

for vertuous Syr Iohn Norris, read victorious Syr John Norris: in the 5 page of η for I introduce in a discontented Scholler, read I introduce a discontented Scholler: in the 8 for His affentrion, reade His assertion. In the 5 of I for verie companie, reade verie timpanie. In the 5 page of κ for in this first case, reade first in this case. [Corrected in the places.—G.]

FINIS.

